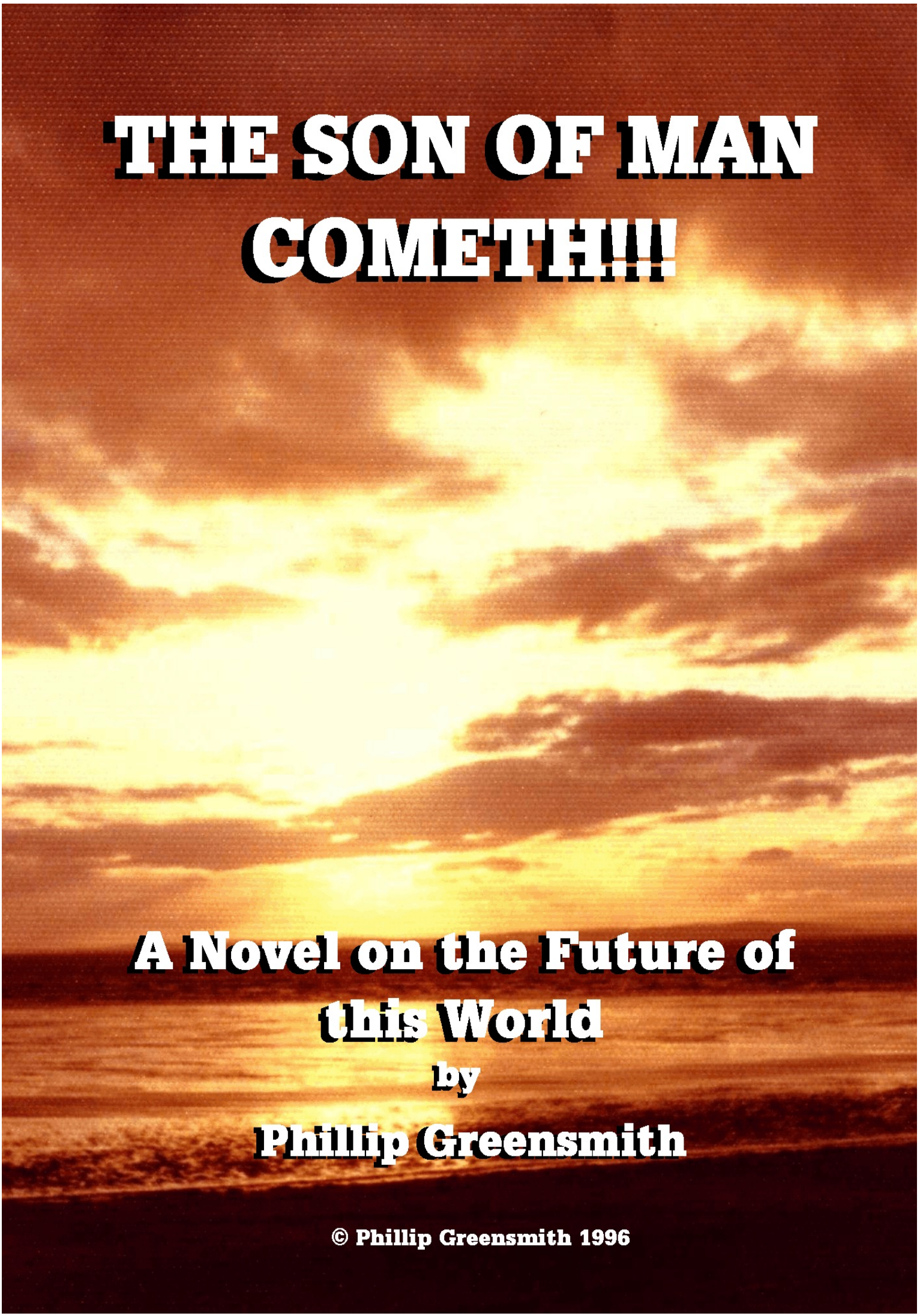

THE SON OF MAN COMETH!!!
A Novel on the Future of this World
by
Phillip Greensmith
© Phillip Greensmith 1996

THE SON OF MAN COMETH!!!

A Novel on the Future of this World

by

Phillip Greensmith

© Phillip Greensmith 1996

All characters in this book are completely fictitious (except for those mentioned in the Bible). No character is not based on any one person, or individual, alive or dead, and any similarity is completely coincidental. Care has been taken in this book not to breach any copyright, and any infringement will be corrected by the author on notification. Contact Address: www.goldengemsofgrace.com

 © Phillip Greensmith 1996

INDEX

Please note that when reading this book on the latest Adobe Reader the page numbering in the margin differs from those given in this index by five pages. This is because the cover page, inside page, the index page, the preface page and the introduction are not counted in this index. Whereas the Adobe Reader starts its numbering from the front cover page. If using the Adobe Reader margin numbering, please remember to add five to the page number shown in this index

Chapter **Page**

1. The Rapture.....1

2. The United States of Europe.....24

3. The Reign of the Anti-Christ.....42

4. The Great Tribulation Begins.....66

5. Abraham Isaacs.....101

6. The Great Tribulation Draws to A Close.....125

7. The Return of the Lord Jesus Christ.....149

8. A Word from the Author.....166

9. Time line From Eternity Past to Eternity Future.....169

10. World Order of Future Events.....170

11. Appendix.....171

 © Phillip Greensmith 1996

Preface

It was back in 1996 whilst I was waiting for my bus home from Eastbourne, when I felt the Lord ask me to write this book. My first thought was as I looked at the enormous task "I'll never do it, I don't know enough about the subject" but with the help of the Lord, hours of study and the help of a Christian friend I managed it.

That very evening when I got home I made a start on the book. The Lord had given me the book title even back then. If I remember correctly, when I got into writing I was still up that night until 3 or 4 o'clock in the morning. With one delay after another (family problems, computer problems, etc.) it took me 7 years to write the first draft and a further 7 years to complete.

I had no idea when I started writing, how the story was to unfold, or who all the main characters were to be, ideas came to me as I wrote. Most of the times when I sat down to write, I didn't know what was going to happen next. Of course I did have the scripture on which I based the whole story. I hope, that in reading this book, you will be as blessed as I was in writing it.

As you read the book, you will see on occasions a small number in superscript, this number corresponds with the same number in the appendix and this will give you the scripture reference that I've base that part of the story on.

You may of course, not agree on everything I've written, and I'm not foolish enough to say that I've got everything right, although I've kept as accurately to scripture as I see it. But there is one thing that is absolutely true, and that is this, 'the Lord Jesus Christ is coming back to this Earth one day'. Let me ask you my friend, are you ready for Him? If not, then it is my most earnest prayer that you will not only enjoy reading this book, but as you do so, you will come to realise your need of Him and come to know Him as your personal Lord and Saviour.

He is a wonderful person and wants you to know Him, Jesus loves you, He really does.

 © Phillip Greensmith 1996

INTRODUCTION

In this novel I hope to bring the truths of God's Word about the return of the Saviour, The Lord Jesus Christ. I have endeavoured to keep as accurate to the Bible as I can.

In writing this book I hope to show that there is hope for the future. Man is not going to destroy this world by nuclear weapons or anything else he can devise. It will not be destroyed by global warming or thinning of the ozone layer, or a large meteorite striking the Earth. It will be destroyed in God's timing.

According to the Bible this world has at the very least 1,007 years left, and since The Rapture has not yet taken place, the Earth may have many more years than that.

What is The Rapture? It is when all who have come to know Jesus, and have a personal relationship with Him, are taken Heaven before The Tribulation starts. No-one knows when it will take place, it could even happen before this day is over.

What is The Tribulation? It is seven years in length and will be the most horrible time this world has ever known (far worse than I've told it in this book). A one world government will formed with a dictator of whom the Bible calls the Anti-Christ, (although it doesn't specifically name him). This person is most likely alive at this present time. He will not come to power until after the Rapture. He will first come in as a man of peace, and will be the best diplomat the world has ever known. He will sign a peace treaty with Israel for seven years, but will break it after only three and a half. During the Tribulation he will become the most evil dictator the world has ever known.

Seven years after The Rapture'THE KING OF KINGS AND THE LORD OF LORDS, The Lord Jesus Christ' will ride out of Heaven with all of those who belong to Him, along with all the Heavenly angels, and He will take vengeance on all who have refused His offer of salvation and forgiveness. He will then reign on Earth for 1,000 years. During this time He will do what none of this world's leaders have ever been able to, or ever will be able to do. He will achieve world peace. There will be an end of all wars.

At the beginning of the 1,000 year reign of Christ, Satan will be bound and cast into a bottomless pit, and will not be realised until the end of the 1,000 year reign. At the end of this period he will yet again try to create trouble on the Earth declaring war on Christ who will overthrow him and cast him into the lake of fire, which is called Gehenna.

Although this novel is completely fictitious, it is based on the truth of Christ's certain return to this Earth. The events in this book will one day come to pass.

It is my most earnest prayer that as you read this book you will realise your need of the Saviour before it is too late. Remember Jesus said "No man knows the day or the hour... Therefore be ye also ready for in such an hour as ye think not **'THE SON OF MAN COMETH!'"**

CHAPTER ONE THE RAPTURE

Little Jimmy Greene was a good boy, he was eight years old and had deep blue eyes and fair hair. He was a happy sort of boy who really loved life. He was the sort of boy that every parent would love to have, and everyone who knew him liked him.

He lived with his parents in a semi-detached house in a new town that had been built about halfway between London and Brighton to take some of London's growing population.

When Jimmy's dad arrived home from work, Jimmy greeted him at the door as usual.

"And what has my boy been doing all day?" Jimmy's dad asked as he picked him up in his arms.

"I've been playing with my friend, Sam," Jimmy replied "we've been playing policemen!"

Jimmy's dad laughed. "You really like playing police, don't you?" he said.

"Yes," said Jimmy "I still want to be a policeman when I grow up."

They were still talking on the doorstep when mum called for tea. Jimmy really loved his mum and dad. They were the kind of parents that any child would want.

As they went in for tea Jimmy felt that he could never be happier, so you can imagine the horror that must have come to this young lad's mind when the following events came to pass.

"By the way Jimmy" said his dad as they sat down for tea "your mum and I will be going out tonight, and Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda will be looking after you."

Although Jimmy loved his aunt and uncle, he still felt a bit glum, as he really wanted to spend time with his mum and dad. "Why have you got to go out? Why can't you stay in with me?" he asked sorrowfully and longingly.

"A friend from work asked me yesterday if your mum and I would like to go to some sort of Christian meeting in the middle of town to hear some evangelist fellow called 'John Calvin Smith'" replied Jimmy's dad. "Neither of us really wants to go, but I gave my word and you know that I always keep it."

"Yes dad" said Jimmy "I know that" but he still wished that they could stay at home.

Sadly for Jimmy the time soon passed and it was time for his mum and dad to go out. Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda had arrived and Jimmy heard Mr Browne tooting his car horn. Jimmy's mum and dad quickly got up and hurried to the door. "I love you mum, I love you dad" said Jimmy.

"We both love you too, son" said his dad. As Jimmy watched the car disappear out of sight, he was still wishing that his mum and dad could have stayed in.

"Never mind" said his aunt "let's go inside and I'll make you a cup of hot chocolate, then we'll have a game of draughts" (checkers).

"Yippee!" shouted Jimmy, hot chocolate was Jimmy's favourite drink, and he really loved playing draughts with his aunt. He could beat her every time. They played draughts for an hour or so and Jimmy's aunt didn't win one game.

The time passed and soon it was time for bed. Jimmy hurriedly got ready because his uncle always read him a bedtime story and Jimmy loved it. His uncle read him a story from his favourite book called 'The Jolly Policeman'.

After reading the story Uncle Henry said goodnight and went downstairs. Jimmy couldn't sleep because he was missing his mum and dad so much. He remembered that there was an old Bible on the shelf in his room, that his dad found when they moved in a number of years earlier, which had just got put on a shelf and nobody had ever bothered reading.

Because he couldn't sleep, he decided to get the old Bible down from the shelf and have a read. He got out of bed and climbed on a chair to reach it, as he did so, the chair slipped and he landed on the floor in a heap. Fortunately he was unhurt.

His uncle, on hearing the noise shouted up to him, "Jimmy is everything all right?" When Jimmy explained what had happened his uncle said, "you should have shouted me to get it for you. You might have hurt yourself. Anyway, as you can't sleep and you've got the Bible down, you may as well read it as you've taken so much trouble to get it, but don't read too long. You've got to go back to school tomorrow after your long summer break."

"All right uncle" said Jimmy, and he went to pick the Bible up from where he had dropped it as he fell. As he did so, he noticed that it had fallen open at the first Epistle to the Thessalonians, chapter four, and verses 16 to 18 caught his eye and he read, *'For the Lord himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words'.*

After having read this, Jimmy lay on his bed wondering what these words meant. As he lay there, he began to grow tired.

Suddenly he was awakened by the news on the television. "A Jumbo Jet has crashed over the City of Manchester" said the news reader. "An eyewitness said there appeared to be no-one at the controls.

We have just received a report that cars and other vehicles have started crashing into each other for no apparent reason. The drivers seem to have disappeared into thin air.

Another report has just reached us of a coach party returning from a Christian camping holiday in the Cotswolds. We go now live to the Cotswolds where our on the spot reporter is interviewing the coach driver."

"So what happened Mr Samson?" said the interviewer.

"Well," replied Mr Samson "there I was driving along listening to those Christians singing their choruses, like they always do. I like driving on these Christian tours. I do enjoy hearing those Christians singing.

Anyway, there I was driving along listening to their singing, when suddenly it stopped. I mean, it just suddenly stopped, and when I looked round, to see why it had all of a sudden gone so quiet, I found that I had got an empty bus. I mean, the bus was completely empty, it really scared me, I can tell you. I mean, one minute I had bus full of these Christians singing their choruses, and the next second my bus was completely empty."

"Is there any chance," said the interviewer "that the passengers got off when you stopped the bus?"

"Not a chance," said the driver "I was travelling on the motorway at 70 mph at the time."

"Thank you Mr Samson" said the interviewer, "We now hand you back to the studio."

"We have just heard" continued the news reader "that there is chaos at the local County Hospital. We now hand you over live to our on the spot reporter."

"We have just heard that all the babies in the maternity wing have disappeared" said the reporter. "One lady was said to have been giving birth when her baby disappeared. Both the mother and midwife are receiving treatment for shock.

An eminent surgeon was performing open heart surgery and was about to make an incision when the patient vanished into thin air, and a local nursery just down the road from here has reported that all the children have disappeared. Most of the staff have been taken to hospital

suffering from shock. Both the hospital and nursery staff say they are too busy trying to sort out the chaos to talk to us right now. I now hand you back to the studio."

"We are now getting reports," continued the news reader "of road traffic accidents, rail and air crashes, from all over the world. A large airport in New York has had at least one hundred planes crashes due to 20% of the air traffic controllers suddenly disappearing into thin air.

To add to the problem of the millions of missing people, open graves are being discovered all over the world and no-one seems to have a clue as to who has dug them. Undertakers have been reporting that bodies have been going missing from funeral parlours. What is happening?! Where have all these bodies gone?! Where have all these millions of people gone?! The strange thing is that all of the people who have disappeared were these so called born again Christians, except for the children and babies." See Footnote 1

Just then there was a knock at the door, so Uncle Henry switched off the television and went to answer it. There were two policemen standing there. "I'm afraid we have some bad news, may we come in?" one them asked.

"Yes perhaps you'd better" said Uncle Henry.

"It is about Mr and Mrs Greene" continued the policeman "they were seen coming out of that Christian meeting in the middle of town when suddenly they disappeared into thin air."

"Daddy, daddy, mummy, mummy!!" screamed Jimmy, who had now been fully awakened by the knock on the door and had been listening to all that the policeman had said. "I want my dad, I want my mum!" screamed Jimmy uncontrollably, he just sobbed, and sobbed, and sobbed. "I want my daddy, I want my mummy!" he kept on saying over and over again.

One of the policemen took pity on him and used his radio to call for a doctor. The doctor arrived shortly and gave Jimmy something to calm him down.

The policeman took off his helmet and put it on Jimmy's head. Jimmy gave a slight smile and said "I'm going to be a policeman when I grow up."

"Are you now?" said the policeman. "If you come to the police station tomorrow, I will show you around."

"Will you really?" Jimmy asked.

"I sure will" said the policeman.

"Can we go, please uncle?" Jimmy asked looking up at him longingly through his tears, with his deep blue eyes.

"I think we can do that" said his uncle, kindly. "You know Jimmy, your aunt and I love you dearly, and we will be your mum and dad from now on." Jimmy threw his arms around his uncle and gave him a big hug. "Come on then Jimmy," said Uncle Henry "let's get you to bed if we are to have a look around the police station tomorrow."

By this time the medicine that the doctor had given to Jimmy was starting to make him very tired. Jimmy said goodbye to the policemen, and his uncle carried him up to bed.

Just then there was another knock on the door, so Auntie Freda went to answer it, and who should be standing there but Jimmy's young friend Sam. Sam was a very considerate, caring, and

---

Footnote 1

There is an age of accountability, when a child becomes accountable to God for their sins. In the case of Jimmy and Sam I have used the age of eight as I felt it best suited the book. Because no two children are alike, this age will vary from child to child, but be assured that all very young children, and babies, even those still in the womb are taken to Heaven if they die or will be taken to Heaven at the Rapture. This also includes adults who are mentally impaired and never mature into adulthood.

kindhearted boy. He was a bit like Jimmy in temperament, in many ways. He had jet black hair, and dark brown eyes, and was eight years old. When Auntie Freda saw him she immediately knew that something was wrong. "Whatever is the matter?" she asked kindly.

"I was asleep in bed" said Sam, "I woke up and I was thirsty so I went downstairs to get a drink and found that my baby-sitter had gone and I was left in the house on my own. I put the telly on and heard the news about all those people that had disappeared and I was frightened so I came round to the nearest person I could trust. I thought my mum and dad might have vanished too."

The policeman who had not yet left the house asked "what is your name son?"

"Sam Johnson" he replied.

"And what is your address?" the policeman continued.

"23 Riverside Cottages, Oaktree Garden City" Sam replied

"Just a minute son," said the policeman "I'll go and check" and he picked up his radio and went out of the room.

When he came back the policeman asked to speak to Auntie Freda privately, so they both went into the kitchen. "Mr and Mrs Johnson were seen by a neighbour, as they got on the same bus" said the policeman. They were talking to the driver about having been to hear the evangelist John Calvin Smith. They said, that they had been born again, whatever that means. Anyway they had just said hello to their neighbour, when they vanished into thin air. I have got the doctor on his way back" continued the policeman, "so it might be best if we don't tell Sam until he arrives. Has he got any relatives living nearby?" the policeman asked.

"Not that I know of," said Auntie Freda "but he is perfectly welcome to stay with us, I'm sure Henry won't mind and I know Jimmy won't, Sam is his best friend. They're very close, in fact, they are more like brothers than friends" said Auntie Freda.

Just then the doctor arrived once again, and they all went in to Sam who by this time was playing on the floor with Jimmy's electric train set. "We need to have a little talk" said Auntie Freda "come and sit on my knee" she said kindly.

"Why?" asked Sam worriedly "have my mum and dad gone too?"

Auntie Freda nodded sadly.

Sam burst into tears. "Not my mum and dad" he wailed "not mummy and daddy!" He began to sob. The doctor gave him something to calm him down. "I've got nobody now" said Sam through his tears. "I'll have to go and live in one of those children's homes and I'll never be able to see Jimmy or be able to play with him ever again!" he blurted out in one long breath.

"Nonsense!" said Auntie Freda " you can come and live with us."

Sam's face brightened as he said through his tears "do you really mean that?!"

"I certainly do" said Auntie Freda, "I'll see if I can find a pair of Jimmy's pyjamas for tonight. You can sleep in the spare room. If you go upstairs, Uncle Henry is up there, and if you ask him nicely, he may read you a bedtime story."

Sam had spent many a night at Jimmy's house when Uncle Henry had been there and he could remember sitting with Jimmy on his bed listening to the stories told by Uncle Henry, and so he was pleased when Auntie Freda said that Uncle Henry might read him a story.

Sam hurriedly got ready for bed and went upstairs. He met Uncle Henry coming out of Jimmy's room. "Please," said Sam "will you read me a bedtime story?"

"All right," said Uncle Henry with a smile "come on then let's get you to bed."

"Could you read me the 'The Jolly Policeman'?" Sam asked nicely, it was also Sam's favourite story.

"I'm sure that Jimmy won't mind" said Uncle Henry, and off he went to get it

In the meantime Auntie Freda arrived with a cup of hot chocolate for Sam. "I thought you might like a warm drink before you settle down for the night" she said kindly.

"Thank you" said Sam, "I do love hot chocolate."

"I know you do" said Auntie Freda with a smile.

Just then Uncle Henry returned from getting the book. "Could I have a quiet word, Henry?" said Auntie Freda.

"Yes" said Uncle Henry, and they both went out of the room.

"Sam lost his mum and dad tonight as well," said Auntie Freda "so I told him he could stay with us. It would mean he would have to stay in a children's home if he doesn't."

"We can't have that," said Uncle Henry "of course he can stay with us. I thought there was something wrong when he came upstairs."

"Uncle Henry!" shouted Sam from the bedroom, "aren't you going to read me the story?"

"I'm on my way" said Uncle Henry. "I'd better go and read the story" he said.

"I'll have a nice cup of tea waiting for you when you come down" said Auntie Freda.

"That would be nice" said Uncle Henry as he went back into Sam's room. He sat down on the bed and began to read, "once upon a time there was a jolly policeman, he was so jolly that everyone in the village loved him."

As he began to read Sam gradually grew sleepy and before Uncle Henry had read very far into the book Sam was fast asleep, so he tucked him up in bed and went downstairs.

Later that evening as Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda were having their cup of tea, they discussed the events of the day. "What did happen to my brother and his wife," said Uncle Henry "and to Sam's mum and dad, and all those other people who disappeared today?"

"I really don't know," said Auntie Freda "it is a mystery to me. Maybe one of those UFO's came and zapped them away."

Uncle Henry laughed "don't be silly" he said, although he did wonder if there could be any truth in what Auntie Freda had just said. "Is that the time?" he said as he looked at the clock "it's time we went to bed."

"I think you're right, Henry" said Auntie Freda, "it is 12.30. We can try to sort this thing out in the morning."

The next day Jimmy heard a noise coming from the spare room so he went to investigate and was surprised to find Sam playing on the floor with some of his toys. "What are you doing here?!" said Jimmy rather surprised to see him.

"My mum and dad disappeared last night" said Sam with tears in his eyes. "Your auntie and uncle said I could come and live with them."

"That would be smashing, I've always wanted a brother" said Jimmy.

"Me too" said Sam.

"My mum and dad disappeared last night as well" said Jimmy, and he started to cry.

"Come on Jimmy," said Sam "or you'll start me off too."

"I know," said Jimmy "but I love my mum and dad so much, and I don't know how I can live without them."

"I feel the same," said Sam, and he also started to cry.

Just then Auntie Freda heard them and came upstairs and gave them both a hug, and said lovingly "come on boys I know you've both lost your mum and dad, but life still has to go on and crying won't make the situation any better. Come on," she said kindly "dry your tears."

"But we both feel so miserable" said Jimmy.

"I know," said Auntie Freda kindly and she gave them both another a hug "come on, come and get your breakfast we're going to visit the police station this morning."

"Are we Jimmy?" said Sam feeling rather surprised and excited.

"Yes," said Jimmy "when the policeman came round last night he invited us to go and have a look around the police station."

"Great, when can we go?" Sam asked excitedly as they all went down for breakfast.

"As school has been cancelled until further notice we can go straight after breakfast" said Auntie Freda.

"Great" said Sam as he gobbled up his cornflakes. "I'm ready," he said "can we go now?"

"We've got wait for Uncle Henry," replied Auntie Freda "he's just nipped out to buy a newspaper."

No sooner had she finished speaking when Uncle Henry walked in through the door. Jimmy ran up to him. "We're ready to go" he said.

"My, we are in a hurry, aren't we?" Uncle Henry said with a smile.

"They've been ready for the last ten minutes" said Auntie Freda.

"I was going to read the paper before we go out, but I suppose it can wait till later" said Uncle Henry.

After they'd all got ready, they set off for the bus stop.

"I hope that it is a double decker" said Sam.

"Me too" said Jimmy.

"I don't" said Uncle Henry "if it is, you two will want to go upstairs and I don't like going upstairs."

"Why ever not?" Jimmy asked looking rather puzzled.

"There's no driver upstairs" replied Uncle Henry.

"Oh uncle" said Jimmy with a laugh.

The bus was very late in arriving and when it did, it was a bus inspector driving. "What has happened to the regular driver?" said Uncle Henry who was rather puzzled.

"I don't know" replied the bus inspector "twelve of our drivers didn't turn up for work this morning. They're all good workers, probably the best we've ever had. The management gave them permission to hold some kind of prayer meeting in their lunch hour. Anyway that is beside the point. They always without fail, phone in if there is a reason for them not being able to get to work, but this morning we've heard nothing."

"Perhaps they've all been zapped away by one of those UFO's we keep hearing about" said Auntie Freda quietly so that she didn't upset the boys, she was even more convinced by now.

"You may be right" said the inspector.

Uncle Henry wasn't so sure but he was beginning to believe it. "Anyway," he said "we would like two and two half returns to the High Street please."

"That will be two pounds fifty please" said the inspector.

They sat down and the bus began to move and it wasn't long before they were in the High Street, where the bus stopped right outside the police station. As they went inside, Uncle Henry said to the sergeant behind the desk "we've come to see around the police station."

"I don't know if I can allow that" said the sergeant.

Jimmy and Sam's faces dropped and they both looked as though they were going to cry.

"It's all right sergeant" said the chief inspector who heard what was being said. "Pc Graham asked me about today's visit," he continued "and I said it was all right. Pc Graham shouldn't be long," said the chief inspector to Uncle Henry "would you like to come this way?" and he lead

them to a large canteen.

"Is this where you come to have your lunch?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I, personally don't," replied the Chief Inspector "but yes this is where most of the police officers come to have their refreshments.

I'm sorry that the canteen isn't open at the moment, but the canteen staff haven't turned up for work this morning."

"They've all been zapped away by those UFO's" said Auntie Freda under her breath, she was getting even more convinced every minute.

"Shush" whispered Uncle Henry "you will upset the boys."

"However, there is a drink's machine and food dispenser in the far corner" continued the chief inspector.

"You'll have to excuse me" he said "but I must get on with my work. Pc Graham shouldn't be long."

"Can we have a drink please, Uncle?" Jimmy asked politely.

"What would you like?" said Uncle Henry.

"I'd like a lemonade"replied Jimmy.

"Would you like a drink too, Sam?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I'd like a fizzy blackcurrant," replied Sam.

"And how about you Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I'd like a nice hot cup of tea" she replied.

"Right, now, how does this machine work?" said Uncle Henry to himself as he approached the machine.

"Why don't you read the instructions?" said Sam.

Uncle Henry laughed "why don't I read the instructions," he repeated "that is what I was about to do! Put in a fifty pence coin and select the required item," he read "wait for the cup to drop. Take the cup and place it under the nozzle. Wait until the cup is full before removing. If sugar is required for hot drinks, press the sugar button for the required amount before removing the cup."

Uncle Henry put in a fifty pence piece and nothing happened, so he put in another fifty pence and still nothing happened. "I guess it's not working" he said and started to walk away.

Just then a cup dropped and lemonade began to pour out of the nozzle. Uncle Henry rushed back to the machine and put the cup under the nozzle, as he did so it splashed out all over himself. He lost most of it on the floor, so he put another fifty pence in the machine and this time the lemonade started coming out before the cup had dropped and once again he got soaked, so he tried again. This time everything worked perfectly and he managed to get a lemonade for Jimmy. "Here you are Jimmy," he said as he started to walk towards him, but as he did so, he slipped on the wet patch and landed on the floor spilling the whole cup over himself.

Jimmy started to laugh and then Sam started to laugh, they laughed and laughed until they were both rolling about on the floor with laughter. Tears were streaming down their faces.

"Jimmy, what is that piece of card on the floor by the side of the drink's machine?" Auntie Freda asked.

Jimmy went over to have a look, as he picked it up and read it, he started to laugh even more. "It says" he said as he laughed "it says," Jimmy couldn't read it for laughing.

"I think you had better read it Sam" she said.

Sam came over and read the card "it says this drinks machine is out of order" said Sam and he too laughed even more.

"It's not funny" said Uncle Henry feeling rather cross.

"Oh, come on Henry, where is your sense of humour?" Auntie Freda asked trying her hardest not to laugh but not succeeding, "isn't it nice to hear the boys laughing for a change?" she chuckled. "After all they have been through rather a lot."

"I suppose you're right" said Uncle Henry, and he started to laugh, and so did Auntie Freda and before long they were all having a good laugh over it.

"I think we had all better have a canned drink from that other machine over there" said Auntie Freda.

"I wished we had noticed it before" said Uncle Henry still laughing.

"What, and miss all the fun?" said Auntie Freda.

"I suppose you're right" said Uncle Henry.

"I've got hiccups" said Sam.

"So have I," said Jimmy "I don't know when I've laughed so much."

"Me neither" said Sam.

"Perhaps a fizzy drink will cure you both" said Auntie Freda.

"I hope that this one works" said Uncle Henry as he went over to the other machine to buy them all something to drink. He put the money into the machine, and low and behold, it worked perfectly. Jimmy had a lemonade and Sam had a fizzy blackcurrant drink. Auntie Freda and Uncle Henry decided to wait until they got home before they had something to drink. The fizzy blackcurrant drink cured Sam's hiccups but the lemonade didn't cure Jimmy's.

Just then Pc Graham arrived "I'm sorry that I'm late" he said "but I've had an awful lot of work to do this morning. What with all those people disappearing last night and seven of our police officers haven't reported in for work this morning. There are also a number of traffic wardens who have not come to work either.

Anyway, less of my problems. I had better show you around the police station."

"I'm sorry about the mess on the floor" said Uncle Henry. "The notice on the drink's machine had fallen on the floor and I used the machine not knowing it was faulty."

"That's all right," said Pc Graham, "I'll get one of the cleaners to clear it up."

"Henry got drenched with lemonade" said Auntie Freda, "the boys did have a good laugh over it," she said "it was good to hear them both laughing, after the trauma that they have been through."

"I know what you mean," said Pc Graham "I've got two boys of my own, Tommy, who is ten, and Peter who is eight. They lost a favourite uncle last night and were quite upset.

Anyway, would you like to come this way and I will show you around?" Pc Graham took them first to see the prison cells. "This is where we lock up the prisoners when we have arrested someone" he said.

"Can we go inside?" Jimmy asked.

"Certainly" replied Pc Graham.

"I wouldn't like to have to spend much time in here" said Uncle Henry.

Pc Graham then took them to see the interview room "and this is where we do the interviewing" he said.

"What for, is it for a job when you want to join the police?" said Sam.

Pc Graham laughed "no, no," he said "this is where we interview prisoners to find out if we think they are guilty or not."

"Oh, I see" said Sam.

"Would you like to see the control room?" asked Pc Graham.

"Oo, yes pleased" replied the boys.

Pc Graham then took them into a large room full of what looked like computers and television screens.

"From here we can see what is going on all over the town" said Pc Graham.

"Has it cut down on crime?" enquired Uncle Henry.

"It certainly has" replied Pc Graham "people think twice now before they commit a crime. Who would like to try on my handcuffs?"

"Me" shouted Jimmy and Sam both together. Pc Graham took out his handcuffs and put them on Jimmy.

"Why don't you leave them on him?" said Auntie Freda jokingly, but Jimmy didn't think that it was a very good idea.

Then Sam tried them on. "I bet I can get out of them" he said thinking that they were like his toy ones at home, but try as he might he found that he couldn't.

"Would you like your fingerprints taken?" Pc Graham asked.

"Oo yes please" replied Jimmy, but Sam wasn't so sure at first, as he thought they might arrest him, but after Pc Graham explained that it was just for fun, Sam decided to have them taken after all, and was pleased that he did when Pc Graham said that they could keep them to show their friends.

After Pc Graham had taken them to a few more places in the police station, he said "well that concludes my tour of the police station. I hope that you have enjoyed it?"

"We certainly have" said Uncle Henry "and need we ask Jimmy and Sam?"

"Has it put you off being policemen?" Pc Graham asked the boys.

"It most certainly hasn't" said Sam.

"Me neither, I still want to be a policeman when I grow up" said Jimmy.

"Thank you for showing us around" said Uncle Henry.

"Don't mention it, it was a pleasure" replied Pc Graham. "Bye for now, and you boys take care of yourselves."

"Bye" said the boys as they left the police station and went to the bus stop. This time when the bus arrived, it was a double decker, and the boys quickly climbed aboard and went upstairs. Uncle Henry showed the tickets to the driver and went to join the boys upstairs. Auntie Freda decided to stay downstairs and talk to a friend she had noticed as she got on the bus. "You like riding upstairs, don't you?"Uncle Henry asked.

"Yes," said Jimmy "you can see a lot more from upstairs."

"I remember when I was a boy" said Uncle Henry "I used to like riding on the top deck of the bus with your dad and grandad."

"Did they have buses when you were young, uncle?" Jimmy asked jokingly.

"Don't be cheeky" replied Uncle Henry laughingly. "Your Grandad used to tell us how the buses in his day were all open top deck, and if it rained the driver had to get out of his cab and get a long pole and pull the cover over the top deck. A lot of the buses in my day were trolley buses. They used to run on electricity picked up from an overhead cable. I remember when I was a boy and we lived in London," Uncle Henry continued "how one day your grandad, your dad, and I were on our way home on the bus, when, there was a sudden noise of sparks and the bus came to a halt. Can you guess what it was?" Uncle Henry asked.

"No," replied Jimmy "what was it?"

"The pole which picked up the electricity from the overhead wires had come away from the wires and the bus conductor had to get a long wooden pole from underneath the bus and hook

it back onto the wire again" said Uncle Henry.

Soon the bus arrived outside their home and they all got off and went inside. The boys went to Jimmy's room to play with his electric train set. Auntie Freda went into the kitchen to cook the dinner. "Henry"she called.

"Yes dear" Uncle Henry replied as he went into the kitchen.

"Gladys was telling me that she saw a UFO last night so that must be the answer to what happened to all those missing people" said Auntie Freda. "They were all zapped away."

"Don't be silly" said Uncle Henry "Gladys is always saying that she has seen a UFO. You know what she is like. You don't really believe her, do you?" he asked.

"I suppose not" said Auntie Freda but she still wasn't so sure.

"Anyway to change the subject" said Uncle Henry "as it's a nice sunny day and school has been cancelled why don't we all go to East-Hampton on Sea for the rest of the day?"

"That sounds a good idea, Henry," said Auntie Freda "why not ask Jimmy and Sam and see what they say?"

As they were all having dinner, Uncle Henry asked "how would you boys like to go to the seaside this afternoon?"

"Yes please" exclaimed the boys.

"We'll go only on the condition that you both do the washing up" said Uncle Henry.

"Ok" said Sam "I'll wash and you dry, Jimmy."

"But I prefer to wash" said Jimmy.

"So do I" said Sam.

"Don't fall out boys" said Auntie Freda "Sam can wash this time as he did ask first."

As they were washing up, for a bit of fun, Jimmy secretly kept putting some of the pots back for Sam to wash again. Sam did wonder why he washed twelve plates, seven dishes, and nine glasses. It wasn't until they had finished and Jimmy started to laugh that Sam caught on as to what had happened and then they both had a laugh over it.

"Have you got my swimming trunks, auntie?" Jimmy asked.

"Yes," said Auntie Freda "I've got them."

"But I haven't got any" said Sam sadly.

"It's all right Sam," said Auntie Freda kindly "you can borrow a pair of Jimmy's for now, he's got a spare pair."

After they had got everything ready, they all set off for the railway station. It was only about five minutes walk from where they lived so it didn't take long.

On arrival at the station there was a large notice which read, 'Some trains are subject to delays due to a shortage of staff'.

"How long do you think the next train to the seaside will be, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"I don't know," replied Uncle Henry, "it will probably be about eight coaches."

Jimmy laughed "that's not what I meant" he said. "What I meant was how long will we have to wait for the next train?"

"Not long," replied Uncle Henry "if it's on time it should only be about five minutes."

Sure enough when the train arrived, and it was on time. Jimmy and Sam were so excited and they quickly climbed on board followed by Auntie Freda and Uncle Henry and they were soon on their way to East-Hampton.

"I've never been on a train before" said Sam excitedly "it's smashing."

"Listen to the noise of the train on the track" said Uncle Henry, "it's going diderly hum."

"No, it's not" said Sam.

"It is," said Uncle Henry "listen."

"No, it's not, it's going clickerty click" said Jimmy.

The journey took only about half an hour and it wasn't long before they arrived at East-Hampton on Sea.

On their way to the sea they passed a large Baptist Church. A poster had been put up on the notice board that caught Uncle Henry's attention which read, *'For the Lord himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words. 1 Thessalonians 4:16-18'.* "I wonder what that means" said Uncle Henry.

"That is the exact verses from the Bible that I read last night" said Jimmy. "I wondered what they meant when I read it, then" he said.

"I wonder if there could be any connection between these verses and what happened last night?" said Auntie Freda.

"Well let's go inside and see if anyone knows what it means" said Uncle Henry. "Look it says that they are selling tea and coffee."

"That sounds a good idea Henry," said Auntie Freda "let's go in."

As they sat down at a table, a middle-aged lady came over to ask what they would like to order?

"Two cups of tea please," said Uncle Henry "and what would you boys like?" he asked.

"I'd like a lemonade" said Jimmy.

"And I'd like a fizzy blackcurrant" said Sam.

The lady went off to get the order. When she came back, Auntie Freda asked "do you know what the poster on the front of the church means?"

"Yes," said the lady "I know what it means only too well" and she began to cry. "You see" she said sadly "my husband warned me many times that the Rapture would take place one day, but I wouldn't believe him, and now it is too late. Last night the Lord came and took him home to Heaven and he is now rejoicing with all the other born again Christians, and I'm eternally lost" she said. "I will never ever be able to see my husband again."

"Why ever not?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Because," replied the lady "I knew how to be saved before the Rapture took place and I turned it down, and it says in the Bible that no-one who knew how to be saved before the Rapture will ever get a second chance afterwards.[1]" **See Footnote2**

"To be saved, to be saved from what?" Auntie Freda asked.

"To be saved from God's wrath" replied the lady.

"How can we be saved" Auntie Freda asked.

Footnote 2

I've included this part in the story as a warning not to leave it too late. There is no promise given in the Bible that anyone having heard the way of salvation and rejected it will ever get another chance of accepting Christ afterwards. However, if you are reading this book and you have been left behind after the Rapture, and you have any concerns about whether you can be saved or not then the Lord is still speaking to you regarding salvation and you can be saved. Please see appendix 1, or read the paragraph in the last chapter, (chapter 8) marked with an asterisk.*

"God bless you my dears," replied the lady "if you don't know how to be saved then you may still have a chance, but I am afraid that I can't tell you how because I have forgotten, which just goes to prove the point."

"What is the Rapture?" Auntie Freda asked.

"It is when the Lord Jesus comes, just like the poster says, to take all His people home" replied the lady. "We are now in the period of time known as the Tribulation when God will pour out His judgement on the Earth. 'Ooh'!" she exclaimed sadly "if only I had listened to my husband. He warned me so often that this would happen and now it's to late, it's to late, and he's gone and I'm left behind and I will never ever see him again.

I am sorry to have made a fool of myself in front of you" said the lady.

"That's all right" said Auntie Freda "please don't apologise, we all understand."

Jimmy and Sam went over to the lady and gave her a cuddle to try to cheer her up. Jimmy looked up at the lady and said "my mum and dad disappeared last night. And so did my friend Sam's. Do you think that they are in Heaven?" Jimmy asked.

"What is your name, son?" the lady asked.

"It's Jimmy" he replied.

"My name is Nora" said the lady.

"Do you think that our mums and dads are in Heaven?" Jimmy repeated.

"Well," said Nora "if they disappeared last night without a trace then I would say they must be."

"How can I get to Heaven?" Jimmy asked.

"I really don't know" replied Nora "God seems to have erased the way of salvation from my memory. I only wish that I could remember."

"My mum and dad went out to hear that evangelist John Calvin Smith last night" said Jimmy.

"How strange," interrupted Sam "so did mine."

"Well, there you are then"said Nora. "If they went to hear John Calvin Smith and they disappeared without a trace last night, then it is very likely that they are now in Heaven. My husband and I went to hear him a number of years ago now" she continued "and he went forward at the meeting to get saved, and I didn't. 'Ooh'! if only I had" she said with a sigh "I'd be with him in Heaven now, but because of my own stupidity and foolishness I've been left behind." By now Nora really started to sob.

Auntie Freda got up and put her arm around her shoulder and said "come on" in a tender voice "let me buy you a nice cup of tea."

"Thank you" said Nora, then Auntie Freda took her over to a table in the corner to have a talk in private leaving Uncle Henry and the boys to talk over what had just been said.

"Do you think that our mums and dads are in Heaven, uncle?" said Sam.

"I don't know," said Uncle Henry "I really don't know. Ever since I was a boy I've never had much to do with God, or the church, although I've always believed that there is a God, but what Nora has said does seem plausible."

After Auntie Freda had talked with Nora for about half an hour and had done all she could to help she came over to Uncle Henry and the boys.

"How is Nora?" Uncle Henry asked.

"She is a lot better than she was but she is still very upset" said Auntie Freda.

"It is very understandable if all that she has said is true, then I think I would feel the same if it were me" said Uncle Henry.

"Can we go to the beach now, please, uncle?" said Sam.

"All right," said Uncle Henry "let's get going."

It was only a short walk to the beach so it didn't take long. On arrival the boys quickly got changed.

"The last one in the sea is a ninny" said Sam as he raced straight towards the sea, but he wasn't looking where he was going and he tripped over a rock and fell headlong into the sea. Jimmy fell about laughing but Sam didn't find it very funny.

"How would you like it if it had been you?" he said crossly.

"I'm sorry" said Jimmy "but you did look so funny."

"Would you boys like something to eat?" called Auntie Freda from the beach.

"Yes, please, auntie" Jimmy replied "come on Sam" he said as he raced to get something to eat.

Auntie Freda had packed a picnic tea before they left. The boys loved picnics.

"What have you got for us to eat, auntie?" Jimmy asked.

"I've got chocolate spread or cheese and onion sandwiches, tomatoes, salad, fresh cream sponge cake, jam doughnuts, jam tarts, and crisps. I've packed lemonade, and some fizzy blackcurrant for you boys and a flask of tea for your uncle and me."

"I'd like chocolate spread sandwiches and some fizzy blackcurrant please" said Sam.

"Me too, I'd like the same, said Jimmy "except I'd prefer lemonade instead of blackcurrant. I love chocolate spread sandwiches" he added.

"And what would you like Henry?" Auntie Freda asked.

"I'll have cheese and onion sandwiches, and a cup of tea, please Freda" he replied.

"I think I will start with a bit of salad" said Auntie Freda.

"Can we go to the funfair please, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"When we've finished tea, and you boys have got yourselves dry and changed" replied Uncle Henry.

The boys hurriedly ate up their tea and got themselves dry and changed. "Can we go now, uncle?" Jimmy asked excitedly.

"My, we are in a hurry, aren't we?" replied Uncle Henry.

"Can we go now, please?" Jimmy asked once again longingly.

"Yes, in a moment when I have finished my cup of tea" replied Uncle Henry.

"I want to go on the roller-coaster" said Jimmy to Sam.

"I want to go on the dodgems" said Sam.

"Are you ready then boys?" Uncle Henry asked as he swallowed his last mouthful of tea.

"I think I will join you later" said Auntie Freda. "I think I would like to sit here and look at the sea for a while."

"All right," replied Uncle Henry.

"I will meet you at the roller-coaster in about half an hour" said Auntie Freda.

After Uncle Henry and the boys had gone, Auntie Freda sat looking at the sea for a while and as she did so, she began to think about what Nora had said. "I wonder if it could be true?" she thought to herself. After thinking about it for a few moments she began to pray. It was not something she was used to doing. "Dear God," she began "I don't really know you, and I've never really had much to do with you, and I don't even know if you are listening to me, but if you are, and what Nora said is true, please will you show Henry, Jimmy, Sam and me how we can be saved, and how we can know that one day we will live with you forever in Heaven? And indeed if we can be saved, amen?"

After she had finished praying it was as though she heard a small voice whisper to her "I will."

She was very surprised as she didn't really expect to get an answer. "I must hurry and tell Henry" she thought to herself.

The funfair wasn't far from where she had been sitting, so it didn't take her very long to get there, and she was soon standing beside the roller-coaster waiting for Uncle Henry and the boys. It wasn't long before they arrived and both Jimmy and Sam were each eating a toffee apple.

"We've been on the dodgems" said Sam with a smile.

"And now we're going on the roller-coaster" Jimmy added.

"Are you going to take the boys on, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked jokingly.

Auntie Freda took one look at the roller-coaster and when she saw that it went upside down three times she thought better of it. "I wouldn't deprive you of the pleasure, Henry" she said.

Uncle Henry paid the fare and he and the boys climbed aboard the roller-coaster. Jimmy and Sam sat in the front and Uncle Henry sat behind them.

"I'm excited" said Sam.

"So am I" said Jimmy.

As they went into the first dip, and then straight into the first loop and turned upside down, Jimmy said "this is really brill."

"It certainly is," replied Sam "isn't it uncle?"

Uncle Henry who was sitting right behind them made no reply. He wasn't enjoying it quite as much as the boys. In fact he was feeling rather queasy and was only too pleased when the ride finished.

"Can we go on again, please, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"Not today" replied Uncle Henry feeling only too glad to be off the ride.

"You know when I was on the beach?!" said Auntie Freda.

"What about it?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Well," she continued "when I was on the beach I started praying. It is something that I don't do very often" she said "but I asked God that if He was listening, if He would show us how to be saved, and at the end of my prayer I heard Him whisper 'I will'."

"It could have been the wind whistling past your ears?" replied Uncle Henry.

"It might have been" replied Auntie Freda "but I don't think so."

Just then Jimmy noticed that there was a speed boat ride on the sea just outside the funfair.

"Uncle, can we have a ride?" he asked.

"Auntie Freda might take you on if you ask her nicely" Uncle Henry replied still feeling rather queasy from his roller-coaster ride.

"Auntie, please can we go on the speedboat?" Jimmy asked, looking at her longingly with his deep blue eyes.

"Yes of course you can" she said "I never could resist you when you look at me like that."

"I'll stay here" said Uncle Henry.

"Ah! please! won't you come as well, uncle" Jimmy asked, "it won't be half as much fun without you?"

"Come on Henry" said Auntie Freda "the boys will be disappointed if you don't, and the fresh sea air will do you good."

"Ok," said Uncle Henry wearily "I'll come."

"Thank you, uncle" said Jimmy with a smile.

"It is worth it to see you smile" Uncle Henry replied.

They left the funfair and crossed the road to where the speedboat was moored against a small jetty which jutted out a short way into the sea.

As they all got into the boat Jimmy said "I want to sit in the front."

"No, I want too" said Sam.

"There's plenty of room in the front," said the driver "there is enough room for both of you." Jimmy and Sam climbed into the front with the driver and Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda climbed into the back.

After Uncle Henry paid the fare they got underway. Jimmy and Sam were really enjoying the ride, but Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda weren't enjoying it quite so much, as every time the boat went over a wave they kept getting wet.

After the ride was over Sam said, "that was really good fun, wasn't it uncle?"

"It's all right for you boys," replied Uncle Henry "you were both sitting in the front. Every time the boat went over a wave your aunt and I got wet. I don't know who is the wettest your aunt or me." Both Jimmy and Sam started to laugh.

"That's twice I have been soaked today" said Uncle Henry almost laughing, himself. "Let's go and have a nice cup of tea in that cafe across the road."

"That sounds a good idea" said Auntie Freda. "I fancy another cup of tea and we've finished all the tea in the flask."

"What would you boys like to drink?" Uncle Henry asked as they sat down.

"I'd like a nice cup of hot chocolate please, uncle" said Sam.

"Me too" replied Jimmy.

Uncle Henry looked at his watch "when we've finished our drinks we should be thinking of getting back to the station if we are to make the last train home" he said.

When they arrived at the station, they found that there was a large notice which read, 'We apologise for any inconvenience, but due to a shortage of staff there are no more trains running today'.

"Oh dear," said Uncle Henry "we will have to try to find somewhere to spend the night."

"I noticed somewhere on the seafront just a little way up the cliff that looked quite nice, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"Did they have any vacancies?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I think so, Henry" said Auntie Freda "I'm not sure, but I think I saw a sign in the window that said that they had."

"Perhaps we had better go and see" said Uncle Henry.

When they arrived at the hotel, Auntie Freda said "I was right, they do have vacancies look there's a sign in the window."

"Well at least it looks like we'll have somewhere to stay the night" said Uncle Henry.

"Can I ring the door bell?" Jimmy asked.

"But I want too" said Sam.

"I think Jimmy should ring it as he asked first" said Uncle Henry.

It was a good few minutes before anyone came to the door. In fact they were all about to go, when a stern faced lady answered the door. "Can I help you?" she said.

"We need somewhere to spend the night," said Uncle Henry "and we noticed that you have some vacancies."

"I've got just two adjoining rooms which cost twenty pounds each per night" said the lady.

"We'll take them both" said Uncle Henry.

"I hope that you are not like the last people" said the lady "they nipped off last night without paying."

"Don't worry we won't do that" said Uncle Henry.

"This is a nice room" said Auntie Freda as they went in "don't you think so Henry?"

"Yes, I do" he replied.

"Can we go and see the illuminations?" Jimmy asked.

"What about you Sam, would you like to go and see them too?" said Uncle Henry.

"Yes please" replied Sam.

"How about you, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I don't see why not" said Auntie Freda "the fresh sea air will do us all good. How about I make us a nice cup of tea first from the tea supplied?"

"That sounds a good idea, Freda" Uncle Henry replied.

"What about you boys," Auntie Freda asked "I'm afraid that they've got only squash?"

"That'll be all right, auntie" said Jimmy with a smile.

"And what about you Sam?" Auntie Freda asked.

"It'll be okay if that's all they've got" Sam replied.

After they'd finished their drinks they all set off and it wasn't long before they were walking along the seafront looking at the illuminations. "Aren't the lights pretty, Jimmy?" said Sam.

"Yes," replied Jimmy.

They hadn't been walking long when Sam spotted an open top bus which was giving a tour of the lights.

"Can we go on the bus please, uncle?" said Sam.

"That's a good idea, we might be able to see the lights a lot quicker and get you both to bed sooner" replied Uncle Henry jokingly.

"I don't think that I would like to go for a bus ride after all" said Sam.

"You soon changed your mind," said Uncle Henry with a smile "I wonder why?"

Sam made no reply.

"I was only joking" said Uncle Henry.

"Would you really like to go on the open top bus?" he asked.

"Yes please" said Jimmy.

"So would I" said Sam after he realised that Uncle Henry was joking.

As they boarded the bus, the boys raced upstairs. After he had paid the fare Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda joined the boys, and it wasn't long before they were all on the top deck of the bus enjoying the sights of the seaside and its illuminations.

"This is smashing" said Jimmy "I've never been on an open top bus before. Was it like this when you were young, uncle?"

"I'm not that old" replied Uncle Henry with a smile. "Your Grandad could remember this type of bus. He told me many a time about them when I was a boy."

"Look over there Jimmy" said Sam. "Look at that flower, it's got a bee in it. I wonder how they have managed to do that?"

"I think it's clever" said Jimmy "it must have taken a lot of light bulbs to make that bee."

"Yes, and the bulbs must be really small to be able to give such fine detail" Sam added.

"Look over this side, boys" said Auntie Freda "there's a water fall made up of lights."

Jimmy and Sam got up and went to the other side of the bus. "Wow" said Sam "that's brill."

"Just look at all those colours" said Jimmy.

"And it really looks as though the water is running down from the rock" said Sam.

"I don"t want to worry you but there are some funny looking green men from Mars coming out of a flying saucer on this side" said Uncle Henry.

The boys rushed across to see. "They look just like someone I know" said Sam smiling as he

looked straight at Jimmy.

"I thought that they looked more like you" said Jimmy.

After having been on the bus for about half an hour, the bus arrived back at the point where they got on.

"I think that this is where we get off" said Uncle Henry.

"Ah," said Jimmy "can't we stay on and ride round again."

"No," said Uncle Henry" it's time we were getting back to the hotel, and besides it is starting to rain."

"All right" said Jimmy still wishing that he could have stayed on the bus a bit longer.

As they approached the hotel, the rain started to come down really heavy.

"We only just made it" said Auntie Freda "if we had stayed out any longer we would have been soaked. If you boys get yourselves ready for bed, I will make you both a nice cup of hot chocolate" she added.

"Ok," said Jimmy. "Uncle Henry, will you tell us both a bedtime story please?" he asked.

"All right" replied Uncle Henry "get yourselves to bed and I will be with you in a minute."

"I'm glad that we couldn't go home tonight" said Auntie Freda "we've had such a nice time and we wouldn't have seen the illuminations. Weren't they beautiful, dear?" she said.

"They were the best lights I've seen in ages" Uncle Henry replied.

"I don't like this weather" said Auntie Freda.

"Neither do I" said Uncle Henry "the weather seems to be getting worse."

Just then Jimmy shouted from their adjoining room "uncle aren't you going to tell us a story?"

"I'm on my way" Uncle Henry replied. "I'd better go, Freda" he added.

As he went in, Jimmy asked "will you tell us the story about the policeman who arrested the police inspector by mistake?"

"Once upon a time" Uncle Henry began "there were two policemen. One was an ordinary police constable and the other was a police inspector. They both lived in the country not far from each other. In fact they were the best of friends, both on and off duty. Although the police constable did have to remember to call the inspector 'sir' when he was on duty." Jimmy and Sam were engrossed in the story and they loved to hear Uncle Henry tell it. It was one of their favourite stories.

After he had told them three stories, the boys began to grow tired and quickly fell asleep.

"I don't like this storm at all" said Auntie Freda as Uncle Henry came back into their room. "Just look at the sea, I don't know when I've seen waves this size" she added as she looked out of the window. "They must be thirty to forty metres in height and if we weren't on a cliff, the sea would be probably be in our room. I've never seen it rain so hard in all my life, and just look how dark it is outside. I've never seen such a dark night. If it weren't for the street lights, I wouldn't be able to see anything at all."

"Never mind" said Uncle Henry "why don't you close the curtains and forget about it. I'll go and put the kettle on and make us both a nice cup of tea. Why not put your feet up and put the telly on. That cowboy film that you've been wanting to see for a long time is on tonight."

Auntie Freda took his advice and put the television on, but it hadn't been on long when the picture went off. They both tried switching the television over to all the other channels but they couldn't get a picture no matter how they tried. "There must be something wrong with the transmitter" said Uncle Henry.

"I think you may be right" said Auntie Freda.

Just then there was the biggest clap of thunder that they had ever heard. It was so loud that

whole building shook. It woke up the boys, who came running through as fast as their legs could carry them, they were terrified. Jimmy ran straight into the arms of his uncle screaming "what was that?!"

Sam ran straight into the arms of Auntie Freda trembling and held onto her as tightly as he could.

"I don't like this weather at all, can we go home?" Auntie Freda asked.

"What, with weather like this, I think we are safer in here?!" replied Uncle Henry. "Besides" he added "we can't get home, we don't have any transport."

Gradually the storm died down as the night went on. Eventually they all managed to get to bed although Jimmy and Sam were too frightened to go back to their own room. Fortunately there was a bed settee in Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda's room, so they slept the remainder of the night there.

In the morning as she opened her eyes wearily, Auntie Freda said. "I don't want to see another night like that. I can tell you; Henry. I don't feel that I have been to sleep at all."

"Neither do I," said Uncle Henry sleepily "I see the boys are still asleep."

"I think we should let them sleep" said Auntie Freda.

"You're right, Freda" said Uncle Henry. "I think I will just nip down and see if I can get us some breakfast."

Just then there was a knock at the door. When Uncle Henry opened it, there stood the landlady looking as white as a sheet. "You need to get your family and belongings together as quickly as possible and get out of the hotel" she said. "Last night during the storm the cliff crumbled underneath the hotel and it's balancing on the edge of the cliff. It could go over at any moment."

"Quick, Freda!" said Uncle Henry "wake the boys and I'll get our belongings."

Auntie Freda rushed over to wake the boys while Uncle Henry got their belongings together, and they all rushed out of the hotel.

No sooner had they got outside when the hotel began to make a groaning sound and slipped over the cliff. "Wow" said Auntie Freda "that was a close call." It was then that she noticed that there wasn't a building left standing on the seafront. "Thank you God for saving us all" she said under her breath.

"What was that you said, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I was praying," she replied "I was thanking God for sparing our lives."

"I think you're right, Freda" said Uncle Henry "it must have been some sort of divine intervention. It is amazing that our hotel didn't go over the cliff like all the others."

"I'm frightened" said Sam as he ran up to Auntie Freda and flung his arms around her.

"So am I" said Jimmy "can we go home?"

"Yes of course we can" replied Uncle Henry.

After paying and then thanking the landlady for getting them out of the hotel in time, they made their way to the railway station. On the way they had to pass the Baptist Church where they had met Nora the day before.

"What has happened to that church?" said Auntie Freda in amazement.

The church had been struck by lighting in the night and was little more than a heap of smouldering ruins. As they passed by, the ambulancemen were just putting Nora into the ambulance.

"If only I'd listened to my husband" she groaned as they lifted her into the ambulance.

"Is she going to be all right?" Auntie Freda asked.

"It's hard to tell" replied one of the ambulancemen.

"I hope she is going to be all right, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"Can we go home from this awful place, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "let's go."

On arriving at the railway station they found that there was a notice which read, 'We apologise for any inconvenience, but due to last night's storm we are unable to run any trains today due to damaged track and fallen trees on the line. A bus service has been laid on outside the station. This service will call at all stations en route to London'.

"We'd better get on the bus" said Uncle Henry. As they did so, he asked the driver "how much does it cost for two and two halves to Oaktree Garden City?"

"The bus is running on a contract to the railway" said the driver "you will need railway tickets to get on, and if you have, it won't cost you anything."

"We have, but they're yesterdays' tickets" said Uncle Henry.

"That'll be all right" said the driver "because the trains were cancelled we've been told to accept yesterdays' tickets. Uncle Henry handed the tickets to the driver and after having clipped them he started the bus and at last they were on their way home. The return journey took considerably longer than it had the day before. Instead of the half hour it took to get to East-Hampton it took about an hour to get back. The bus took them to Oaktree Garden City railway station, from where it was only a short journey home.

As they turned the corner into their road Jimmy gasped in horror "ju, ju, just, look" he stammered "just look at the house. Most of it has fallen down and there is only the garage left standing."

"If my house in the country is still standing, we will have to go and live there" said Uncle Henry.

"But what about my toys" said Jimmy as he began to cry.

"Don't worry, Jimmy" replied his uncle "your aunt and I will get you some more."

"But what about my teddy bear?" answered Jimmy with tears in his eyes "I want my teddy."

"I think he left it in the garage, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"I'll go and have a look" replied Uncle Henry, and off he went to look for it.

About five minutes later he emerged from the garage with Jimmy's teddy bear. Jimmy ran up to him and took his teddy from his uncle and gave it a big hug.

"We'd better go to your house, Sam, and see if we can get a few of your things together" said Uncle Henry.

It was only a two minute walk to Sam's house and they were soon standing outside. "Well," said Uncle Henry "at least your house seems to be intact."

"I've got to take my teddy"said Sam after they'd all gone inside to help him get a few things together. "And I must take my policeman's uniform, and my train set, and all the rest of my cuddly toys" Sam continued

"Hold on" interrupted Auntie Freda "we don't have enough hands to carry all your toys, but we can come back another day to get some more of them. You can take two toys for now, which would you like to take?"

"I'd like to take my teddy and my police uniform please, auntie" replied Sam.

"Now," said Uncle Henry "how are we going to get your things over to my house?"

"You could use that big old suit case that is on top of the wardrobe in my mum and dad's room" said Sam.

"I'll go and get it" said Uncle Henry "which way is it to your mum and dad's room?"

"It's at the top of the stairs, and it's the first room on the right" replied Sam.

Uncle Henry when upstairs the get it and it wasn't long before he emerged with a large brown suitcase.

"You'd better get some of your clothes together Sam" said Auntie Freda.

"Ok" said Sam and he went upstairs to get them.

He returned shortly with a pile of clothes and handed them to Auntie Freda, who then packed them away neatly in the suitcase.

"But what about me?" Jimmy asked "I don't have a change of clothes."

"Yes you do Jimmy, remember, the last time you came to stay for a week. You left some clothes at our house" replied Auntie Freda.

"Oh yes" said Jimmy "I do remember. That was a nice holiday I had with you both. I really enjoyed it. It was brill" he added "but I didn't expect to be going back so soon."

"I think that it's time that we were on our way" said Uncle Henry. "There is a bus due in about ten minutes. I think we'd better set off now if we're to make the bus."

They arrived at the bus stop with five minutes to spare. It wasn't long before the bus arrived and they all climbed on board. "Can we go upstairs, please, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"Yes all right" replied Uncle Henry.

"Two and two halves to 'Henry's Greene Farm' please" he said to the driver as they climb on board (Henry's Greene Farm was the name that Uncle Henry had given to his cottage and also the market garden that he ran).

"That will be ten pounds fifty" said the driver.

Uncle Henry paid the fare and went upstairs to join Auntie Freda and the boys.

"Is it very far to where you live, uncle?" enquired Sam .

"It's about an hours bus ride" replied Uncle Henry.

"And what's more, it is near the sea" added Jimmy.

"Great" said Sam with a smile "that's twice I will have been to the sea in one week. Will we be able to play on the beach?" he asked.

"I doubt it" laughed Jimmy "uncle's cottage is on top of a cliff."

"Oh," said Sam "what a pity."

"But you will like it" said Jimmy "there's lots of room to play policemen and there's lots of places to hide. Uncle has built a miniature railway in the garden."

"Oo, have you really, uncle?" said Sam "I like trains."

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "but I wouldn't call it a garden, it's to big for that. Where we live, has about seventy five acres of ground. I went to night school to learn how to build a miniature railway and with a little help from some friends we managed to do it. I sometimes give rides to the people in the nearby village"

"Can I have a ride please, uncle?" said Sam longingly.

"I think we can manage that sometime" said Uncle Henry. "I'm getting thirsty" he continued "I think the first thing I'm going to do when I get in is put the kettle on and make us all a nice cup of tea."

"But I don't like tea" said Sam.

"Don't worry we've got some squash at home for you boys" said Auntie Freda.

"We're here," said Uncle Henry "this is where we get off."

They all hurried down the stairs and off the bus. As they got off, Sam caught sight of the thatched cottage.

"Wow," said Sam "this is brill!"

The cottage was in a beautiful country setting and stood back from the road, and in the front

garden was a beautiful pond.

"There used to be red roses lining the pathway" said Uncle Henry "but it looks like last nights storm has blown them all away."

"There is a lot more to see" said Jimmy "and there is lots of room to play. Uncle built me a tree house in the orchard at the back. Can we go and play please, uncle?" he asked.

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "but don't be late for tea. Have you got your watch on, Jimmy?" he asked.

"Yes" replied Jimmy.

"Then be back at five o'clock" said Uncle Henry.

"All right," said Jimmy "we will" and off they went to play.

"I think I'll put the news on" said Uncle Henry as he switched on the radio.

"Last night's storm has created havoc throughout the country" said the news reader. "The country has almost been brought to a standstill with many roads being so badly damaged that they are almost impassable. Due to road conditions it is difficult to travel very far at all. There are, however, a few roads in the southeast that are still passable. Hundreds of buses have had to be cancelled because of road conditions and there are hardly any trains running due badly damaged track and fallen trees on the lines. Because of damage to runways there have been no flights in or out of any of London's airports. In fact the only place in the UK that any planes have been able to take off and land is Edinburgh. We now go over to the weather centre to see what was the cause of last nights storm. So what was the cause of the storm?" the news reader asked the weatherman.

"Well," replied the weatherman "the storm was due to Hurricane Freda which we expected would continue north up the Atlantic Ocean but it suddenly turned along the English Channel, up the North Sea and the doubled back over the country. We originally expected it to blow itself out before it crossed the Atlantic. Hurricane Freda has been very hard to predict."

"Well fancy that!" said Uncle Henry "you've got a hurricane named after you, Freda."

"Shush!" said Auntie Freda "I'm trying to listen."

"Sorry!" said Uncle Henry rather sheepishly.

"Now for the rest of the news" the news reader continued. "Scotland has today been given complete permission to rule themselves from a parliament setup in Edinburgh. Wales has been granted the same permission to rule from Cardiff. The government has also decided to give back Northern Ireland to the Irish Republic."

"Well," said Uncle Henry as he switched off the radio "all these people disappearing into thin air, and the UK seems to be falling apart. I just don't know what this world is coming to."

"I sometimes wonder that myself" said Auntie Freda with a sigh. "Still life has to go on" she added.

"I'm hungry, what's for tea?" enquired Jimmy as he came in.

"So am I" said Sam.

"I don't know," replied Uncle Henry "you will both have to wait and see. I think your aunt is cooking a hot meal as we haven't had much to eat all day."

As they sat down for their meal Uncle Henry asked "how would you boys like to come for a ride tomorrow when I take my produce from the garden to sell at the village?"

"Oo, yes, please," said Sam "I would."

"Me too" said Jimmy.

"After tea we'll all have a singsong around the organ just like we used to do" said Uncle Henry. "But before that, you boys can help me with the washing up" said Auntie Freda.

Jimmy finished his tea before Sam and went in to his uncle who was sitting in the lounge reading the newspaper.

"Uncle, I don't feel like singing" he said.

"Why not?" said Uncle Henry kindly. "Come and sit on my knee and tell me all about it."

"I still feel so sad" replied Jimmy and he started to cry. "I want my mum and dad. I love them so much and I really miss them. I want mummy and daddy" he sobbed as tears rolled down his cheeks.

His uncle gave him a hug and said kindly" that's it Jimmy, you have a good cry, and get it out of your system."

"I want my mum and dad, I want my mum and dad" sobbed Jimmy "I'll never ever see them again."

Just then Auntie Freda arrived with a cup of hot chocolate for Jimmy having heard him crying.

"I think that you will see your mum and dad again someday" she said kindly.

"How do you know that?" Jimmy asked inquisitively through his tears.

"I'm not sure," replied Auntie Freda "but somehow I feel that you will. If your mum and dad are in Heaven and we can find out how to get there, then surely you are bound to see them again."

Gradually Jimmy began to calm down. He even managed to smile when his aunt offered him one of his favourite chocolate biscuits.

"Now," said Uncle Henry "how about that singsong?"

"All right," said Jimmy "let's have that singsong."

Auntie Freda called Sam who by now was playing upstairs with his teddy bear, to come and join them in the lounge.

Uncle Henry played the organ and they all gathered around and had a good old sing until it was the boys' bedtime.

The next day, after breakfast, Jimmy and Sam hurriedly got ready to go to the village with Uncle Henry.

"How are we going to get there?" Sam asked.

"We'll be going in my van" replied Uncle Henry.

"I didn't know you could drive" said Sam. "Why didn't you come in the van when you came to look after Jimmy?"

"It was broken down at the time and I didn't get time to fix it beforehand" replied Uncle Henry.

"I fixed it last night when you were in bed.

Would you and Jimmy like to help me load the van?" he added.

"Yes" replied Sam.

They loaded potatoes, carrots, cabbages, onions, cauliflowers, and tomatoes.

After about half an hour the van was loaded and they were on their way to the village.

"Where is it we are going?" Jimmy asked.

"We are taking this lot to Old Joe the grocer" replied Uncle Henry. "You'll like Old Joe, he loves kids."

Soon they arrived outside Old Joe's shop.

"Where's Old Joe today?" Uncle Henry asked John the shop assistant as he entered the shop. John had worked for Old Joe since he was seventeen, and he had been treated like a son.

"I'm pretty worried about him" replied John. "He's not come to work or been himself ever since his daughter Sarah and her boyfriend disappeared a couple of nights ago. Old Joe is heart broken and really upset. He thinks they have eloped, but I'm not so sure. It's not like Sarah to

do a thing like that. I don't know what's happened to her, or her boyfriend. To make matters worse, the couple that he rents his cottage did a moonlight flit on the same night without paying their rent. I never thought that they would do such a thing. They seemed such a nice couple, always so friendly and ready to help anyone. Still, you never can tell about people can you?"

"I'm very sorry to hear that" said Uncle Henry. "Please give him my regards when you see him."

"I will" said John.

"Now," said Uncle Henry "we had better get the van unloaded. Will you give me a hand boys?" he asked.

Jimmy and Sam were soon helping Uncle Henry and with a little extra help from John the van was soon unloaded and Uncle Henry and the boys were on their way home to Henry's Greene Farm.

CHAPTER TWO THE UNITED STATES OF EUROPE

"Have you heard the news?!" Uncle Henry asked as he came in.

"What news is that, Henry?" Auntie Freda enquired.

"Well, you know that the UK rejoined the EU a few months ago?" said Uncle Henry.

"What about it?" Auntie Freda asked.

"Rejoining the EU was the worst thing the UK could have done!" said Uncle Henry.

"Why do you say that, Henry?" Auntie Freda replied

"I've just been to the village and Old Joe was telling me that the EU has decided to become one large country with Rome as its capital, it's on all the placards."[2] said Uncle Henry.

"Never!" said Auntie Freda in amazement. "I never would have thought that this country would give up its sovereignty of this island. What Adolf Hitler wanted to do in the war we are now doing of our own free will."

"Let's put the news on to find out more about it, Freda" said Uncle Henry as he turned on the radio.

"Here is the news, and this is James Johnson reading it" said the news reader. "Today it has been confirmed that from midnight tonight The European Union will become one nation. The new country is to be called 'The United Federal States of Europe' and is to appoint a president for its leader. The president is to receive a crown and a robe as his seal of office. Mr Joshua Christian has been chosen for this position. He has proved in the past to be a brilliant diplomat and politician and has a peace-loving nature. If anyone can solve the problem of the divisions in Europe, he can. These decisions were taken after long discussions between the member countries. It was decided that it would benefit all members of the union and would be in the best interest of all concerned. It will make better relationships with other countries in the community. It will also, cut out a lot of red tape, making it a lot easier to transport goods from one European State to another with no need for border crossings. Neither will passports be required when travelling from one state to another. The Prime Minister is to travel to Brussels today to sign the second treaty of Rome. We have in our London studios the Prime Minister of England. Mr Prime Minister," continued James Johnson "what made the government decide to give up its sovereignty to Rome and make Rome the capital and not Brussels?"

"Well," replied the Prime Minister "first of all, let me say although the EU is to become one nation with Rome as its head. England along with France and Germany will still retain the right to veto decisions made by Rome if we deem that decisions made are not in the best interests of our countries. We are not giving up total sovereignty. We had discussions in great detail at Brussels a couple of weeks ago and it was decided then by all concerned that it would be best for us to become one nation. It makes good economic sense for trade and industry, for ease of travelling abroad for a holiday in another European State, or if someone wishes to just have a day trip to France or Germany."

"But why Rome for the capital?" James asked. "Why not Brussels where the seat of government has been for years?"

"The idea of Rome was first suggested by Mr Christian who felt at the time that Rome would be the best place and all concerned thought that it was a more suitable place than Brussels" replied the Prime Minister. "It is better situated and more central for commerce to Europe, Asia and Africa, and after all, it is the second treaty of Rome that all member countries are signing."

"Thank you Mr Prime Minister" said James Johnson.

"It has also been confirmed that Scotland who was given the complete right to govern themselves has decided not to join The United Federal States of Europe. We have the Scottish Prime Minister in our Edinburgh studios. Mr Prime Minister," said James "why has Scotland decided to opt out of Europe?"

"We don't feel that it is in the best interests of Scotland that we join the UFSE" replied the Prime Minister. "When they governed us from Westminster, Scotland often came off the worst. Now we've got our freedom from England we don't feel that it would be in the best interests of Scotland for us to give up our sovereignty again to some European Parliament."

"But don't you think that Scotland will be isolated if you don't join the UFSE?" James asked.

"Well, we managed before the formation of the United Kingdom, so, I expect that we will manage in the future" replied the Prime Minister.

"Thank you Mr Prime Minister" said James.

"Ireland has also decided to withdraw from the EU as have some of the Scandinavian Countries. Wales, however, has decided to stay in the union. We now go live to our Cardiff studios where we talk to the Welsh Prime Minister. What made Wales decide to stay in the union when Scotland and Ireland are opting out"?

"We in Wales," replied the Prime Minister "think that the formation of the UFSE is a good sound and economic idea. After all we have been trading as the EU for a good number of years, so why not become one single nation? We are all for anything that makes trading a lot easier in the future."

"But don't you think that it is in the interest of Wales to withdraw from the union?" asked James. "After all, the Scottish Prime Minister has just said that they don't want to be ruled by Europe after getting their freedom from Westminster?"

"Not at all, James," replied the Prime Minister "as I said a moment ago, we in Wales think that The United Federal States of Europe is very good sound economic sense. It was discussed at great length by all the member countries and it was decided then that it seemed in the best interest of all concerned that becoming one nation was the best thing to do. Not wishing to repeat what has already been said, but it does make trading a lot easier between member states."

"Thank you Mr Prime Minister" said James.

"So, from midnight tonight, Great Britain, who fought for freedom and independence in World War Two will give up its status as a nation and become part of a Federal Europe. Whatever your opinions on this matter, you are invited to phone in at nine o'clock for tonight's special programme on Europe.

Now for the rest of today's news."

"I don't like the sound of that at all, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"I don't think I do either, Freda" said Uncle Henry "still, we can't do much about it. I guess we will just have to make the most of it."

"What does it mean, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"It means that Britain will no longer be a nation in its own right, it will just be a state in one large country called The United Federal States of Europe.

Anyway, how would you boys like to come for a ride to see Old Joe? When I went earlier, I forgot to take any potatoes."

"Oo, yes, please" said Sam, "we'd love to wouldn't we Jimmy?"

"You bet," said Jimmy "that would be smashing."

"Come on then boys" said Uncle Henry "let's try and forget Europe for now and get out into the fresh air."

They were soon on their way to the village to see Old Joe.

"I wonder if he will tell us anymore jokes like he did last time we went" said Jimmy.

"I hope so" replied Sam "they are so funny."

"Old Joe's jokes are rather corny" said Uncle Henry.

"I don't think so, I think they are funny" said Jimmy. "Like the one about the surgeon that was doing an organ transplant and put a piano in by mistake."

"See what I mean?" said Uncle Henry.

"Well" said Jimmy "we think they are funny, don't we Sam?"

"Yes" said Sam who was laughing on hearing the joke again.

"I think Old Joe's name should be Joe King instead of Joe Smart" said Uncle Henry.

Jimmy and Sam laughed "that's very funny" said Jimmy.

It wasn't long before they arrived at Old Joe's shop.

"Hello boys" said Old Joe as they went inside. "It's nice to see you again. Would you both like a sweet?"

"Yes please" said the boys.

"Help yourselves," said Old Joe as he offered them a jar of mints.

"Mints are my favourites," said Sam.

"I'll just go and get your potatoes I forgot to give you earlier, Joe" said Uncle Henry.

"Ok" replied Old Joe.

"Will you tell us a joke please?"Jimmy asked longingly.

"Ok" replied Old Joe "now let me think. Have you heard the one about the man who said he had seen twelve flying saucers?"

"No" replied Jimmy.

"Well," said Old Joe "the story goes like this. A man went running into a pub and bought a pint of beer and sat down at a table. He looked rather upset and out of breath. The barman seeing the state of the man, went up to him to see what was wrong and if he could help. "I've just seen twelve flying saucers" said the man.

"No wonder you look so upset and worried" said the barman.

"I should be" replied the man "I upset my wife and she started throwing them at me. I wouldn't have minded so much but the saucers were part of our best tea service.""

Jimmy and Sam started to laugh, they thought that it was so funny.

Just then Uncle Henry came in with ten sacks of potatoes on his barrow. "Where would you like them putting, Joe?" he asked.

"Would you put them through the back in the usual place please, Henry?" replied Old Joe.

"Will you tell us another joke please?" Sam asked.

"It's time we were going" said Uncle Henry.

"Perhaps some other time boys" said Old Joe.

On their way home Sam asked "can we go for a train ride when we get back?"

"I'm not making any promises, but I will think about it" said Uncle Henry.

When they arrived back at the farm Jimmy and Sam went off to play. "Let's have a game of football" said Jimmy.

"Ok," said Sam "that's a good idea."

"I'll go and get the football" said Jimmy as he disappeared into the shed for a few moments.

"Come and look at this!" he said as he emerged. "There's a family of spiders in here." Sam went into the shed and sure enough there, in one corner, there were hundreds of baby spiders all bunched together and climbing over each other. "Aren't they cute?" said Jimmy.

"Yes" said Sam who wasn't quite so interested, although he did think they were cute. "Come on Jimmy" he said "let's have that game of football." Jimmy and Sam left the spiders and went to play outside.

"That's your goal over there, between those two posts, and mine is from the shed to that bush" said Jimmy.

"Ok, then let's start the game"said Sam as he kicked the football straight into Jimmy's goal.

"That's not fair, I wasn't ready!" complained Jimmy.

"All right we won't count that goal"said Sam.

It wasn't long before the boys were really having fun kicking the football around. Jimmy had scored three goals and Sam had scored five by dinner time.

"That was fun" said Jimmy "we'll play again after dinner, I've got to beat you" he said with a smile.

"What are we doing this afternoon uncle?" Jimmy asked as they went in for dinner.

"I thought we might go for a ride to Smugglers' Cove" replied Uncle Henry.

"Smugglers' Cove where's that?" Sam asked.

"It's not very far, it's just a few miles down the road" replied Uncle Henry.

"Would you like some swede for your dinner, Henry?" shouted Auntie Freda from the kitchen.

"Yes, please, Freda" he replied.

As they were eating their dinner Jimmy asked "what is Smugglers' Cove?"

"It's a place where in the fifteenth century smugglers used to hide whisky, rum and barrels of beer that they had smuggled into the country" replied Uncle Henry.

"What's it like?" Sam enquired.

"Oh you wouldn't like it, Sam, it tastes horrible"replied Uncle Henry teasingly.

"Not the alcohol" said Sam with a smile. "I meant what is Smugglers' Cove like?"

"Oh!" said Uncle Henry "why didn't you say so in the first place? Smugglers' Cove is a cave down by the seashore, it's very nice. I've been there lots of times. Some of the caves are quite big."

"When can we go?" Jimmy asked.

"Just as soon as we've all helped your aunt with the washing up" replied Uncle Henry. "You boys do the pots and I'll clear the table" he added.

"I'll wash and you dry, Jimmy"said Sam.

"All right" said Jimmy with a big smile on his face. "And no putting the pots back so that I'll wash them again" said Sam.

"Ah," said Jimmy "you've spoilt my bit of fun now."

"Tell ya what, you wash and I'll dry" said Sam with a big grin on his face. Sam intended doing exactly what he had told Jimmy not to do, but before he had chance, Jimmy started washing up the pots that Sam had just dried without him noticing.

"That's funny" said Sam I thought I'd dried this bowl before?!"

Jimmy started laughing "you have" he said "you've dried it twice already."

"You little stinker," said Sam "I thought I'd dried far more pots than I should have done."

The time passed by and it wasn't long before it was time to go.

"You boys can get in the back of the van and your aunt can come in the front with me" said Uncle Henry. The journey didn't take very long and they soon arrived at Smugglers' Cove.

"Where are the caves?"Jimmy asked as he got out of the van.

"Don't be in so much of a rush," said Uncle Henry "this is only the car park. We've got to go down the cliffs to get to the caves. There's five hundred steps to walk down, or we could go

down on the cliff railway."

"Let's go down on the cliff railway please?" said Jimmy looking longingly at his uncle with his deep blue eyes.

"It's all right Jimmy, I had every intention of going on the railway" said Uncle Henry.

"You rotter," said Jimmy smiling "and I thought you were going to make us walk down all those steps."

"I thought that as well" said Sam.

"Come on then,"said Uncle Henry "let's get on this cliff railway."

"Wow! it's very high" said Sam as they got on the train.

"Look auntie, isn't the view smashing," said Jimmy "you can see for miles."

Auntie Freda had a quick look but soon looked away as she didn't like the height very much. "I shall be glad when we reach the bottom" she thought to herself. "Is it really nice in the caves, Henry?"she asked as the train started to move. "I've lived in this area all my life and never been to Smugglers' Cove before."

"You'll like it, Freda" replied Uncle Henry. "These days they light the caves with electric lighting. Some of them are really beautiful."

"Is this ride free uncle?" Sam asked.

"No Sam we have to pay at the bottom"replied Uncle Henry.

Sure enough when the train reached the bottom, there, in front of them, was a pay booth. "'Oh dear', Sam, we've come down the cliff only to find that the ride on the train was too expensive for me to pay" said Uncle Henry trying to keep a straight face.

"Have we?" said Sam looking rather worried.

Jimmy caught on straight away and was trying his best not to laugh. He had seen the price on the pay booth.

"I could give you my pocket money" said Sam.

"I just don't know how I'm going to pay?"repeated Uncle Henry. "It's going to cost twenty pence each" he said.

"Oh uncle!" said Sam with a laugh.

"I had you going there for a minute, didn't I?" said Uncle Henry.

"You certainly did" replied Sam who was now feeling very relieved.

"You are a stinker, Henry" said Auntie Freda with a smile on her face.

"Children will believe anything" said Uncle Henry to the girl at the pay booth.

"I know what you mean" she said "I've got three of my own."

"I'd like two adults and two children for Smugglers' Cove, please" said Uncle Henry.

"That will be five pounds please," said the girl.

"Can you change a twenty-pound note?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Certainly sir, but I will have to give you five pounds in coins" replied the girl.

"That'll be all right" said Uncle Henry.

The girl took the money and gave Uncle Henry the change along with the tickets. "You will need to use your tickets at the automatic barrier to enter the cove" she said.

"Which way is it to the cove, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"It's just a little way along the beach, Jimmy" replied Uncle Henry. "It's through that cave over there. It was a good place for smugglers to hide their wares, because you can't see the cove from the beach" he added.

"I wouldn't like to have had to carry all that contraband up those five hundred steps"said Auntie Freda as they entered the cave.

"What's contra, or whatever it was you said auntie?" Jimmy asked.

"The word is contraband, Jimmy," she replied "it means goods that have been smuggled into the country without paying tax on them"

"Oh I see," said Jimmy "I don't think I would like to have had to carry all that contra, or whatever it was up the cliff either."

"Me neither"said Sam.

When they reach the mouth of the cave leading to the cavern, they found an automatic ticket barrier in which they had to put their tickets into in order for it to let them through.

On leaving the cave they found themselves in a large cove which had been gouged out of the cliff by the constant battering of the sea.

"Wow"said Jimmy "this is brill."

"You can only get in to Smugglers' Cove at low tide" said Uncle Henry.

"But what if we get cut off by the tide"Jimmy asked feeling rather frightened.

"Don't worry Jimmy, the sea doesn't get into the part of the cove that we'll be visiting," Uncle Henry replied reassuringly "and besides, the times that the cove is open, is timed to coincide with the tides."

"I wondered why the sea was so far out, now I know"said Jimmy.

"Wow, just looks at those stalagmites, Sam" he said as they entered the caves.

"Aren't they big?" said Sam.

"Can we go into the cavern where the smugglers hide the things they were smuggling?" Jimmy asked.

Auntie Freda gasped in amazement as they entered the cavern "this is really beautiful" she said.

The cavern was very large and was lit by dozens of artificial coloured lights which illuminated the walls in many different colours. It had a small waterfall which was lit from behind and glistened in the light. The waterfall flowed into a small stream, which in turn flowed out of the cavern and into the sea. The stream was also lit with coloured lights and had small stepping stones in order for people to cross the stream.

"I never realised that it was so beautiful" said Auntie Freda. "Why didn't you tell me, Henry?" she asked.

"I didn't know, that you didn't know" replied Uncle Henry.

"I'll beat you across the stream" said Sam.

"Oh no you won't" said Jimmy as they raced towards it.

"Be careful boys" said Auntie Freda, but they took no notice. Jimmy reached the stream first and stopped. Sam was in such a rush to beat Jimmy that he ran straight past him and on to the stepping stones, but as he raced across the stream his foot slipped on one of the stones and he fell headlong into the water. Sam got up soaking wet and as he did so Jimmy started to laugh.

"It's not funny!" said Sam crossly.

"If you hadn't been in such a hurry to beat me, you would have seen why I stopped" said Jimmy. "One of the steps looked very wet and slippery" he said and he laughed even more.

"Stop laughing!" said Sam, crossly, but Jimmy laughed even more so.

"Oh come on Sam, where is your sense of humour?" said Uncle Henry almost laughing himself. "When I got wet at the police station, you both had a good laugh at me" he said.

"Well," said Sam "I suppose I must have looked rather funny" and then he also started to laugh.

Soon they were all having good laugh over it.

"It's a good job I brought your swimming trunks, said Auntie Freda "I thought you boys might

like to go for a swim in the sea afterwards. You'll have to change into them. You can keep a towel around your shoulders to keep you warm" she added.

Sam soon got changed but he had to keep his shoes on because there were a lot of sharp stones on the cavern floor. As he walked his shoes kept squelching because of the water in them.

"We can hear you coming a mile away" said Jimmy.

"I know, but there is nothing I can do about" said Sam with a laugh as his shoes squelched yet again.

"Your shoes shouldn't be called sneakers," said Jimmy "they should be called squeakers."

"Ha, ha, very funny" said Sam with a laugh.

"Don't you mean squelches?" said Uncle Henry.

"That spoils the joke, squelches doesn't sound a bit like sneakers" said Jimmy.

"I suppose you're right, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry "I never thought about that. This is one visit to Smugglers' Cove that we will never forget."

"That's right" said Auntie Freda "I don't think we ever will."

After they had visited the rest of the caves and caverns Uncle Henry said "it will soon be time for us to go home. Would you boys like to go for a swim before we go?" he asked.

"Yes please" replied Jimmy. "Be careful Sam crossing the stepping stones" said Auntie Freda trying her best not to laugh. "We don't want you falling in again" she said.

"I don't want to fall in again either" replied Sam.

He was very careful not to slip as he stepped carefully across the stepping stones.

On leaving the cove they went straight to the beach. Jimmy hurriedly got changed and he and Sam went into the sea for a swim. They had lots of fun splashing about. After half an hour they began to feel cold and decided to come out.

"Can we go for another ride on the cliff railway please, uncle?" said Sam.

"I don't think I can afford it Sam, it's to expensive" replied Uncle Henry.

Sam was just about to say "does that mean we've got to climb all those five hundred steps" when he remembered how much it cost. "Oh uncle" he said "you can't catch me on that one again, it only cost twenty pence."

They boarded the train and were soon at the top of the cliff, and were in the van and on their way home.

"Why don't we all have a nice game of cricket this evening?" suggested Uncle Henry.

"That sounds a good idea" replied Auntie Freda.

"I really enjoyed this afternoon at Smugglers' Cove," said Sam "thank you uncle for taking me and Jimmy."

"Your welcome Sam, I'm glad you enjoyed it"said Uncle Henry.

"I thought it was really funny when Sam fell in the water" said Jimmy.

"You would!" said Sam.

"That was a really good afternoon out, thank you, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

It wasn't long before they all arrived home, and Auntie Freda went straight into the kitchen to prepare tea.

After they had eaten they all went outside to play cricket.

"I'm going to win" said Jimmy.

"No, you're not I am" replied Sam.

They were just about to start playing when Old Joe arrived with his grandson Tommy.

Now Tommy on the whole was a good boy, although, he could be a little mischief at times. He was eight year's old, and full of fun. He had fair hair and blue grey eyes.

"You couldn't do me a favour could you, please Henry?" said Old Joe. "I've got to go up to London on urgent business and then later get to the airport to meet my son Tom off the plane from America. I'm likely to get back quite late. Would it be asking you too much if Tommy could stay for the night?"

"I think we can manage that Joe" replied Uncle Henry. "We were just about to play cricket Tommy would you like to join in?"

"Oo, yes, please" replied Tommy.

Old Joe said goodbye to his grandson and went on his way.

"Can I be in first?" Jimmy asked.

"All right" said Sam "and I'll be the bowler."

The game was soon underway with Jimmy batting, Sam bowling, Tommy, Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda fielding.

They hadn't been playing long when Sam asked "where's Tommy?"

"I don't know, let's just get on with the game" said Jimmy.

"Righto" said Sam as he bowled the ball. At that precise moment Tommy who had climbed into the tree house unbeknown to any of the others, fired Jimmy's water gun straight at him causing him to miss the ball.

"Your out" shouted Sam as the ball hit the wicket.

"That wasn't fair," said Jimmy "Tommy shot my water gun at me."

"All right Tommy, you've had your fun" said Uncle Henry "now come on down from the tree house." Tommy just laughed and carried on shooting water at everyone. "If you don't come down then I'll have to come up and get you" said Uncle Henry, but every time he tried, Tommy squirted him with water. "I don't really want to get drenched again, I'll wait for him to come down" said Uncle Henry "he'll soon run out of water."

"He won't" said Auntie Freda "you took two five-litre canisters of water up into the tree house this morning for Jimmy and Sam to have a drink if they got thirsty, remember?"

"Oh yes that's right, I'd forgotten" replied Uncle Henry.

"Let me try" said Auntie Freda. "Tommy, are you going to come down?" she asked.

Tommy said nothing, and he squirted Jimmy's water gun at her, but she managed to dodge and the water Uncle Henry hit instead. "Thank you Freda" he said.

"You're welcome" replied Auntie Freda.

"Tommy," she said "if you want to stay up there, you won't be able to have a nice cup of hot chocolate when we go in later."

There was silence for a moment and then they heard the noise of Tommy coming down out of the tree house. "Shall we carry on with the game then?" he said.

They played until it was the boys bedtime. As they went in Uncle Henry asked "would you mind putting the boys to bed tonight Freda? There's a programme on the telly that I would like to see."

"Yes of course I will" she replied "what is it that you would like to see?"

"It's that programme that I always like to watch on astronomy called 'A Look At The Universe' with Professor Wormwood" replied Uncle Henry.

"All right" said Auntie Freda "you go and watch your programme and I'll see the boys to bed."

"Can we have a nice cup of hot chocolate please, auntie?" Jimmy asked, looking longingly at her with his deep blue eyes.

"I wish you wouldn't look at me like that, Jimmy" said Auntie Freda "you know that I always give in when you do. You boys get yourselves upstairs to bed and I'll be up in a minute with

your hot chocolate."

The boys hurried upstairs to bed. When Auntie Freda arrived with their hot chocolate Sam asked "auntie, will you read us a story please?"

"What would you like me to read?" she asked.

"The Jolly Policeman" came the reply.

"I might have known" she said. She began to read "Once upon a time there was a jolly policeman." She hadn't read very when the boys began to grow sleepy. It's time you boys were settling down to sleep" she said.

Tommy got up and went to his room and Jimmy went to sleep in the spare bed in Sam's room.

Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda spent the rest of the evening watching some of their favourite videos on the television.

It was at about eleven o'clock when Uncle Henry stood up stretched and gave a big yawn. "It's time for bed, Freda" he said.

"Ok Henry, I'm coming," said Auntie Freda "it is getting late and I'm really tired."

"I think it's all that fresh air and running about playing cricket" said Uncle Henry as he got into bed. "What on earth is this?" he said "there is something cold and wet in the bed."

"Why don't you pull the covers back and have a look?" Auntie Freda asked. As he did so, he discovered a cold wet face cloth at the bottom of the bed. Both he and Auntie Freda looked at each other and said "Tommy!"

It was about 5 am the next day when Uncle Henry, and Auntie Freda were awakened by their alarm clock.

"What time is it?" Auntie Freda asked wearily.

"It is five o'clock in the morning" replied Uncle Henry. "That's funny, I felt sure that I set the alarm for eight o'clock."

It was then that Uncle Henry remembered that Tommy was staying for the night. "I bet it was that little monkey 'Tommy'" he said with a smile. "Still, I can't be too cross with him, I was a boy once. Tommy reminds me of what I used to be like when I was young. Anyway, enough talking, I think it might be a good idea if we to try to get some more sleep."

It was about 11 am that day when Old Joe arrived to pick up Tommy. "I hope that you have been behaving yourself, Tommy" said Old Joe.

"Of course I have, grandad, don't I always?" came the reply.

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, Jimmy and Sam all looked at each other but said nothing.

"Thank you both for looking after my grandson for me. My son's plane was an hour late arriving at the airport so it would have been even more difficult for me to get back."

"You're welcome, Joe," replied Uncle Henry "we're only too glad to have helped."

"What have you got to say to Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda, Tommy?" Old Joe asked.

"Thank you for having me and thank you for such a nice time" said Tommy nicely with a smile.

"You're welcome" replied Uncle Henry.

Shortly after they had gone Uncle Henry said "how about a nice game of cricket?"

"Yes, please," said Jimmy "are you going to play, auntie?" he asked.

"I'd like to Jimmy, but I've got the dinner to get ready" replied Auntie Freda "perhaps after dinner."

"Ok" Jimmy replied.

Sam was the first bat then it was Jimmy's turn, and then it came to Uncle Henry.

"I bet I can get you out with the first bowl" said Jimmy.

"Bet you can't!" replied Uncle Henry with a smile.

Jimmy bowled the ball and Uncle Henry missed it, but the ball also missed the wicket. "You didn't get me out" said Uncle Henry teasingly.

"I'll get you this time!" said Jimmy as he bowled the ball yet again.

This time Uncle Henry hit the ball and it went clear across the field and got stuck in the hedge. It took Sam about five minutes to find it.

In the mean time Uncle Henry was getting more and more runs.

"Oh, come on!" shouted Jimmy impatiently.

"I'm doing my best" Sam replied.

Eventually Sam got the ball back to Jimmy.

"I'll get you out this time" said Jimmy.

"Oh no you won't" replied Uncle Henry.

"Bet I do?" said Jimmy.

"Bet you don't?" replied Uncle Henry.

Again he hit the ball into the hedge and Sam again ran off to get it.

"I'd better come with you this time" said Jimmy.

Once again the ball was lost in the hedge, but this time it took the two of them ten minutes to find it.

They had been trying to get Uncle Henry out for an hour when Auntie Freda came to say that dinner was ready and as she did so, Uncle Henry hit the ball straight toward her. "You're out" she said as she caught the ball.

"Oh, auntie!" said Jimmy "we've been trying to get uncle out for an hour!"

"Well it just goes to show you who the expert is" she said with a laugh. "It's time for dinner everyone."

After dinner Uncle Henry said "I've got a few sacks of potato's that I need to drop off in the village at Old Joe's shop. Would you boys like to come along for the ride?"

"Yes please" said Jimmy "I like Old Joe. But why didn't he take them when he was here this morning?"

"He's had a lot on his mind lately" replied Uncle Henry "I expect he forgot, and I forgot to give them to him."

"Can I come too?" Sam asked nicely.

"Of course you can Sam," replied Uncle Henry "come on.

They got into the van and set off for Old Joe's shop. On arrival Old Joe was surprised to see them.

"I forgot to give you your potato's when you called round this morning" said Uncle Henry.

"Oh yes, so you did" replied Old Joe "I hadn't notice. Thank you, Henry, you're a real friend. Can I offer you a cup of tea since you've made a special journey?"

"Thank you, that would be nice" said Uncle Henry.

"And what you boys like?" Old Joe asked.

"I'd like a lemonade" said Jimmy.

"And like a fizzy blackcurrant" said Sam.

"Do you know any more jokes?" Jimmy asked as he drank his lemonade.

"Well let me see now" said old Joe. "Have you heard the one about the man that walked into a glue factory with a gun and said "put your hands up this is a stick up?"

Jimmy and Sam started to laugh they thought it was so funny.

"It's good to hear them laughing," said Uncle Henry "they have been through so much."

"It certainly is" replied Old Joe "they are both good lads.

You've just missed my son Tom, he collected Tommy about five minutes before you arrived.

"I would have like to have met him again?" said Uncle Henry. "I think the last time I saw him he was just a teenager. Anyway, I'm sorry to have to go" he said looking at his watch "but I think we must be on our way home, otherwise Freda will be wondering where we are."

"Ah," said Jimmy "can't we stay a bit longer?"

"No, replied Uncle Henry "we've got to get back. Your aunt will be worried if we are too late.

Thank you, Joe, for the drink."

"Don't mention it" replied Old Joe "that was the least I could do when you took the trouble to make a special journey."

"Will you tell us another joke, please?" Jimmy asked Old Joe.

"I think that I'd better save it until next time you come" Old Joe replied "I tell you what, would you both like a sweet?" he asked offering them both a mint.

"Yes please" said Jimmy as he took one.

"What about you, Sam?" Old Joe asked.

"Yes please" replied Sam.

"Thank you again Joe"said Uncle Henry.

"Don't mention it" replied Old Joe.

"Come on then boys" said Uncle Henry "we'd better be on our way."

The boys said good bye to Old Joe and soon they were on their way home.

It was about two months later at breakfast that Uncle Henry picked up the morning newspaper and said "here, listen to this, Freda. It says here in the paper that President Christian is going to do away with cash."

"Your joking!" replied Auntie Freda.

"It's right here in the paper" said Uncle Henry "let me read it to you. It has been decided by President Christian that the United Federal Bank of Europe is to abolish the use of cash throughout the UFSE. A new card system is to be introduced which will work on a points system. Each point equals one Euro. If it proves a success many, other countries of the world may well be introducing it into their country's economics. The card system will work like this. Each person in Europe will be issued with a plastic card which will resemble a credit card or bank card. A persons' wages will be paid into the United Federal Bank of Europe. All you will have to do is find cash machine and place your card into the withdrawal slot and then key in your PIN just like you would with any other card. The machine will then record the number of Euros you require onto the card. You can withdraw as many points as you require up to the amount that you have in the bank at that time. When you go to buy something from the shop, the assistant will put your card into a special card reading machine and this will deduct the cost of the item from the amount of Euros you have on your card. The machine can also work in reverse for refunds and enable a shop to purchase from wholesalers. Points are to be put onto a card rather than withdrawing directly from the bank, because this will give added security. If the card is lost or stolen the finder can only spend what is on the card. If the points were to be withdrawn straight from the bank as you would withdraw cash with a debit card, anyone finding it would be able to spend the whole amount that you have in the bank. By putting the points onto the card will prevent this from happening."

"How will you be able to give me and Sam our pocket money?" Jimmy asked.

"It's all right Jimmy" replied Uncle Henry "it also says here that if you wish to give points to a third party all you will have to do is, find a points transfer machine which can be found at any

bank and place your card into the withdrawal slot of the machine and key in your PIN. Next the recipient places their card into the transfer slot and keys in their PIN. The giver then keys in the number of points that they wish to give and then press the send button and the transfer is complete. In order to save you having to go to find a points transfer machine a home transfer machine can be purchased at low cost. This machine will connect any telephone line to the Federal Bank. A machine can also be purchased to work on any home computer via the internet"

"What does that mean, uncle?" asked Sam.

"It means that we will still be able to give you your pocket money as usual" Uncle Henry replied.

"Oh that's all right then" said Jimmy feeling rather relieved.

"Are you coming outside to play, Sam, I bet I can beat you at football?" he said.

"Yea let's, "replied Sam "but I bet you don't"

"Do you mind if I have a look at the paper, Henry?" said Auntie Freda.

"Yes, sure" said Uncle Henry "I'll go and put the kettle on for a cup of tea."

"Have you seen this bit, Henry?" Auntie Freda asked.

"What bit is that?" he replied from the kitchen.

"About the police" said Auntie Freda.

"No, what does it say?" Uncle Henry asked.

"It says that President Christian is going to disband all European police forces, and reinstate them with a new one called the Federal Police. They will no longer be officers of the law, but officers of the Federal Government."

"I don't think we'd better tell the boys, it might upset them," said Uncle Henry. "They've both got their hearts set on being policemen" he added.

"Well we can't keep it from them forever" said Auntie Freda.

"That's very true," replied Uncle Henry as he brought her a cup of tea "but let's not tell them at the moment" he continued "they've been so happy these last few days and it would be a shame to spoil it for them now.

Would you boys both like a nice chocolate biscuit?" Uncle Henry shouted to the boys as he reached the door.

"Oo, yes, please" came the reply.

"You'd better come in then" said Uncle Henry.

"Can't you bring the biscuits out here?" Jimmy asked "we're enjoying a game of football."

"No," replied Uncle Henry "if you want one, you'll have to come in and get one. Anyway it looks like rain."

Jimmy and Sam came in, and no sooner had they got inside when it started to rain.

"I'm glad we decided to come in, Sam," said Jimmy "we'd have been soaked if we'd stayed out there."

"I think I've won the crossword puzzle competition!" said Auntie Freda in amazement.

"What's the prize?" Uncle Henry asked.

"It's a luxury houseboat" replied Auntie Freda. "I just need to answer a tie breaker" she added.

"Henry, you know something about astronomy, don't you? It says here, what was the farthest known planet in the Solar System in 1995?"

"That is a bit of a catch question," replied Uncle Henry "Pluto which is normally the farthest known planet, was inside the orbit of Neptune in 1995 making Neptune the farthest planet from the Sun."

"How long does it take for light to reach Earth from the nearest star? What is its name and how far is it in miles?" Auntie Freda asked.

"There again, that is another catch question" replied Uncle Henry "the Sun is the nearest star. It is about 93,000,000 miles from Earth and it takes light from it about eight minutes to reach us."

"How long does it take for the earth to orbit the Sun?" Auntie Freda asked.

Three hundred and sixty-five and a quarter days" replied Uncle Henry.

"There is just one more question" said Auntie Freda "if you were standing on the equator what speed would you be travelling at?"

"Let me think" said Uncle Henry "since the circumference of the earth is 24,000 miles and it takes 24 hours for it to rotate once. That means if you were standing on the equator you would have to be travelling at 1,000 miles per hour."

"Uncle, if auntie has won the houseboat where could you keep it?" Jimmy asked.

"If you remember, just down the cliff there's that old jetty where I took you fishing when you came for a holiday a few months ago" replied Uncle Henry.

"Oh yes" said Jimmy "I remember, it's that old jetty where there was a loose plank and I nearly fell in the water."

"That's the one" said Uncle Henry.

"Oo" said Sam "can we go fishing?"

"It seems to have stopped raining so I don't see why not" replied Uncle Henry.

"Do you mind if I take the boys fishing, Freda?"

"Not at all" said Auntie Freda "I've got some work to do and then I've got to nip on my bike to the post office in the village to post my crossword puzzle, so you and the boys go and enjoy yourselves."

"I'll see you later on then, Freda"replied Uncle Henry.

"Jimmy, would you go and get the radio please? It will be nice to listen to some music while we are fishing and I'll go and get the fishing tackle out of the shed" he added and off he went to get it.

"Have you got the radio, Jimmy?" Uncle Henry asked as he returned with the fishing tackle.

"Yes" replied Jimmy.

"Let's be on our way then" said Uncle Henry.

"How far is it?" Sam asked.

"It's not very far" replied Uncle Henry.

"Is it still on your land, uncle?" asked Sam.

"Yes" Uncle Henry replied "it's a small cove with a jetty that runs alongside the cliff and into a cave, similar to Smugglers' Cove except it is a lot smaller, and Smugglers' Cove doesn't have a jetty."

It didn't take them long to reach the top of the steps leading down the cliff to the sea.

"It's a long way down" said Sam as they arrived.

"There's not as many steps as there are at Smugglers' Cove" said Uncle Henry "there are only three hundred steps here and there are five hundred at Smugglers' Cove."

"It's a nice view" said Sam as they started down the cliff.

"Yes" said Uncle Henry "you can see for miles."

At the bottom of the steps Jimmy showed Sam where he nearly fell in the water.

"Can we go inside the cave please?" Sam asked nicely.

"All right but do be careful, there are a few loose planks in there" said Uncle Henry. "I must get this jetty fixed."

"We will be," said Sam "it's a bit dark in the cave" he added.

"There's a switch on the wall for the lights, Sam" replied Uncle Henry.

"It's quite big" Sam said after he had turned on the lights."

"It's certainly big enough for a houseboat" replied Uncle Henry. If your aunt has won that crossword puzzle competition it should do quite nicely once I've fixed those loose planks."

"I hope she has!" said Jimmy excitedly.

"It would be nice" said Uncle Henry "but we will just have to wait and see."

"But wouldn't the houseboat be grounded when the tide goes out, uncle?" asked Sam.

"No," replied Uncle Henry "the water is deep enough and the tide never goes out very far."

"Where does the cave lead to?" Jimmy asked.

"I'm not that sure" replied Uncle Henry "but I think that it somehow connects to Smugglers' Cove.

Anyway, enough of the cave, how about doing some fishing?"

"I'm going to catch more fish than you!" said Jimmy.

"No, you're not" said Sam "I'm going to catch more than you!"

"Let's have some music, shall we?" Uncle Henry commented. "Would you switch the radio on please, Jimmy?"

"Ok Uncle" replied Jimmy.

The radio hadn't been on for more than five minutes when the news came on.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the radio announcer. "President Christian has been so successful in bring together all the European Countries, that many other countries of the World would like to meet with him and discuss the possibility of him helping them sort out many of their problems.

On Friday next, the leaders of the USA, Russia, and China are to visit Rome where they will sign a treaty in which they will give their sovereignty to the UFSE. These countries will be given some right to govern themselves on minor issues. They will serve as sub-countries with the UFSE as the governing body. In return for this, they will be given the right to join the Federal European Monetary Card System.

Because President Christian is such a peace loving and peace seeking person he is to be appointed next Saturday as the head of The United Nations and also the head of NATO.[3] The president has invited Israel to sign a peace treaty for the next seven years and has also invited them to join UFSE. This will guarantee them peace and protection against all their enemies. The president said and I quote "I spoke with Israel's Prime Minister two days ago and he and I have agreed to sign a peace treaty to guarantee Israel protection for the next seven years.[4] I have also invited them to join the UFSE. For far too long Israel has been persecuted and pushed around. Well, this will no longer be the case. From now on Israel will be one of the most respected countries in the UFSE. As a good will gesture I intend to fund the reconstruction of their temple which they intent to rebuild. The Jews will at last have a place in which they can worship their God."

The president is also planning to visit some of the towns in this country" James Johnson continued. "Every town and city the president will visit will have a carnival and a funfair. Great celebrations will take place and each country will have a national holiday for the duration of the visit. He will be speaking about the reforms he intends to bring about in Europe."

"That sounds interesting" thought Uncle Henry. "I wouldn't mind going to find out what reforms he would like to bring in."

"We have just received news from Israel of two fanatical preachers calling themselves Moses

and Elijah" the news reader continued.[5] "They are going about the streets of Jerusalem shouting that Jesus Christ has returned and taken all of His followers home. They are also saying that God is about to pour out His judgement upon the Earth, and that we all must repent of our wicked ways. Well," scoffed the announcer "I don't know about that.[6] If Jesus Christ did return and take His followers home I never saw Him and I don't think that anyone else did. As for God pouring out His judgement on the Earth, I can't ever see that happening. Everything continues to go on just the same as it always has, and always will.

There was a break in at the Federal European Bank today thieves got away with two hundred and fifty thousand euros" continued James Johnson.

"I think I'd rather have heard some music than listen to the news at the moment" said Uncle Henry "would you tune the radio into some music please Jimmy?"

"Sure will" Jimmy replied. He tuned the radio until he came to some old time music.

"That's better" said Uncle Henry "would you leave it there, please Jimmy?"

Just then Sam shouted "I've caught something."

"Reel it in then" said Jimmy.

Sam wound in the fishing line excitedly but when he had wound in his catch Jimmy started laughing "I like your fish" he said.

Somehow Sam's fishing line had got on tangled up on an old boot. Even Sam started laughing when he saw what he had caught.

It was about ten minutes later when Jimmy said I've got a bite.

"It'll probably be another old boot" said Sam laughing.

When Jimmy had wound in his line, he discovered that his hook had caught on the key of an unopened tin of sardines.

Jimmy laughed "see," he said "I told you that I would catch more fish than you."

"That doesn't count" replied Sam.

Uncle Henry and the boys sat there fishing for another hour or so but caught nothing and then it was time to go home.

"Have we got to climb all those steps back up the cliff?" Sam asked wearily.

"No," replied Uncle Henry "there is a lift in the cave that leads to the top of the cliff but you will have to be careful of the loose planks on the jetty."

Soon they were in the lift and at the top of the cliff.

"I told you I would catch more fish than you, Sam" said Jimmy teasingly as they made their way across the field on their way home.

"All right," said Sam with a smile "there's no need to rub it in."

When they reached home, Auntie Freda had a nice tea waiting for them.

"Did you boys have a nice time fishing with uncle?" she asked.

"We didn't fish with uncle," said Jimmy "we used bait."

"Oh, very funny"said Auntie Freda with a laugh.

"Now you know that's not what I meant" she said. "I'll rephrase what I said. Did you boys have a nice time fishing?"

"Yes," replied Jimmy "I caught more fish than Sam."

"There's no need to keep rubbing it in" said Sam. "I caught an old boot and Jimmy caught a tin of sardines" he said.

Auntie Freda thought that it was so funny and started to laugh.

"It's not that funny" said Sam crossly.

"I'm sorry Sam" said Auntie Freda "I shouldn't laugh really. Never mind you can have an

extra cup of hot chocolate to make up for it."

Sam's face lite up "thank you" he said.

Later Jimmy and Sam went out to play football until it was their bedtime. The boys said goodnight to Auntie Freda, and Uncle Henry told them a bedtime story.

"How about a nice game of draughts?" Auntie Freda asked, as Uncle Henry came down the stairs.

"Why not" he replied.

They played draughts until it was time for bed.

It was about two weeks later when an envelope addressed to Auntie Freda arrived from the Oaktree Gazette.

"Open it, auntie!" said Jimmy excitedly.

As she opened the envelope, she let out a squeal of excitement. "We've won the boat!" she said.

"Yippee!" shout Jimmy.

"What does the letter say?" Uncle Henry asked.

"It says" replied Auntie Freda.

"Dear Mrs Greene

Congratulations you have won our luxury houseboat competition.

Please would you arrive at Brighton Marina on the 17th of this month at 2.30 pm to collect your prize. Please report to the Harbour Master's Office, where you will be greeted by, myself, Managing Director of the Oaktree Gazette.

There will also be a press photographer waiting to take your photo for the newspaper.

Please bring this letter along with you and also some form of identification.

Yours faithfully

J Green Managing Director"

The day arrived for Auntie Freda to collect her prize. Jimmy and Sam were up early with excitement.

"As it is such a nice day, how would you all like to go to Brighton early and make a day of it?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Oo! yes, please!" said Jimmy and Sam.

After breakfast they all set off for the early morning train. It took them about just over half an hour to get there. They spent the first part of the morning looking around the shops and then went on to visit the funfair where Jimmy and Sam had a few rides.

On arrival at Brighton Marina they all went to the Harbour Master's Office as requested in the letter.

"We are expected" said Uncle Henry to the Harbour Master.

"My wife Freda Greene has won the crossword competition in the Oaktree Gazette."

"One moment, please sir" said the Harbour Master as he disappeared into a small room at the back of the building.

He reappeared a few moments later with the managing director of the Oaktree Gazette along with a photographer.

"I'm Jim Green the managing director of the Oaktree Gazette" he said. "I understand that you have won our crossword competition for the houseboat?"

"That's my name too" Jimmy interrupted.

"And who might you be?" asked Mr Green as he bent down to speak to Jimmy.

"I'm Jimmy Greene" replied Jimmy.

"Well, I'm very pleased to meet you Jimmy" said Mr Green with a smile. "You know I've got a boy who looks just like you" he said.

"Poor boy" whispered Sam.

Jimmy gave Sam a sharp kick when no-one was looking.

"Ouch!" said Sam.

"What's the matter Sam?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Nothing uncle" replied Sam "I just felt a sharp pain on my ankle" he said.

Sam didn't want to get Jimmy into trouble as he knew he had only kicked him in fun and didn't really mean to hurt him.

"How do you spell your surname, Jimmy?" Mr Green asked.

"G-r-e-e-n-e" said Jimmy.

"Ah," said Mr Green "I don't have an 'e' on the end of my name."

Mr Green turned to Auntie Freda and asked "do you have any identification?"

"I've got the letter you sent me and I've also brought my passport" replied Auntie Freda.

Mr Green checked them over. "That's fine" he said "would you like to come this way?"

Mr Green took them to the quay side where, there, glistening in the Sun, was a beautiful large pale blue houseboat with a white hull which had a red strip running all the way around it. Auntie Freda, Uncle Henry and the boys all gasped in amazement when they saw it.

"WOW!" said Jimmy "this is really brill."

After they had posed for the photographer, they all went on board and went inside.

"It has all the latest computerised satellite navigational systems installed" said Mr Green. "All you have to do is push this button and you get a readout on the panel. As you can see, I've pushed the button and the navigational system has given me the exact map reference for Brighton Marina.

The computer will also give you at the push of a button the time of day in whatever time zone you happen to be in and will reset the ship's clock accordingly.

If you get fed up and want something to do you can always play a game on the computer, such as Beat The Cop"

Both Jimmy's and Sam's faces lit up when they heard that.

"The boat is also equipped with all the mod cons" continued Mr Green. "You have ship to shore radio, a modern galley and four separate cabins. It even has a shower unit which will desalinate sea water. The drinking water comes directly from under the boat through a special water desalination and purifying system.

And last but not least, it has a wide screen colour tv along with a compatible video/dvd recorder which both have a button at the back which converts the system to whichever country you happen to be in at the time.

If you wouldn't mind stepping outside we'd like just one more photo of me handing over the keys of the boat for the Gazette."

After they'd posed for the photo he handed the keys to Auntie Freda.

When all the photos had been taken Mr Green said "we at the Gazette wish you good sailing and we leave the boat in your capable hands."

"I think you'd better take care of the keys to the boat, Henry" said Auntie Freda after Mr Green and the photographer had left. "It's a good thing that you know how to drive the boat, Henry."

"My grandad taught me when I was a young lad" Uncle Henry replied. "We'd better get this thing home then" he added. Uncle Henry turned the ignition key and the engine purred into life.

"I'll cast off" said Auntie Freda.

"All right, but don't use your knitting needles" replied Uncle Henry.

"Ah, Ah, very funny" said Auntie Freda.

After she had cast off, Uncle Henry drove the boat out of the marina.

To get home they had to go out into the open sea. The water was a bit choppy and the boat was going up and down a bit. The boys thought it was great fun trying to stand up straight whilst the boat was rolling on the waves. It took them about an hour and a half to get home.

"There's the cove" said Uncle Henry.

As they pulled in Uncle Henry carefully drew the boat up alongside the old jetty where he had taken the boys fishing two weeks earlier, and secured it to the old jetty with ropes.

"Would you like a cup of tea, Henry?" Auntie Freda asked "I'd just made a pot when you sighted the cove."

"Yes, please Freda" replied Uncle Henry "it's thirsty work driving the boat."

After having a cup of tea Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda and the boys all made their way back to the cottage.

CHAPTER THREE THE REIGN OF THE ANTI-CHRIST

It was a few months later when Auntie Freda came in with the morning newspaper.

"It's war!" she said "we're at war! 'That' President Christian has gone and started a nuclear war."

"Why do you say that, Freda?" Uncle Henry enquired.

"It's in this morning's newspaper. Have you not seen the headlines, Henry?" she asked.

"No, I haven't," he replied "what does it say?"

"It basically says that we are at war with every country that refuses to give up its sovereignty to the UFSE" replied Auntie Freda.

"Never!" said Uncle Henry in astonishment.

"It's right, listen to this" said Auntie Freda as she began to read "President Christian has today fired missiles fitted with nuclear warheads at those countries refusing to give up their sovereignty to the UFSE in order to force them into submission. Millions have been killed by these nuclear blasts. Many towns and cities have been destroyed and some countries have been almost wiped out.[7] Some of these countries returned fire with nuclear weapons of their own which did some damage to the UFSE, but because they had inferior weapons and insufficient numbers the damage was not too serious. Although millions have been killed, the president has said he will continue the battle until all these countries submit to him."

"The man must be mad," said Uncle Henry "who in their right mind would start a nuclear war for no reason. The other countries could fight back with nuclear weapons of equal force. Why he could annihilate the entire population of this planet."

"But, Henry, dear," interrupted Auntie Freda "I don't think that is very likely to happen. He owns 98% of the entire planet's nuclear weapons. However, I still think that it is senseless in killing all these millions of people, and using nuclear weapons is the most inhumane thing he could use. Nuclear bombs destroy all the hospitals so there is no-one and nowhere to take any of the wounded who do manage to survive the explosions."

"You're right" said Uncle Henry "it is barbaric what 'that' President Christian has done, and what's more there's no-one to stop him."

"Still life must go on" said Auntie Freda "I suppose we will just have to make the most of it. I just don't know what he thinks he's doing or what will be the outcome of it all."

Just then Jimmy came in "what's the matter?" he asked "why all the gloomy faces?"

"We're at war Jimmy" said Auntie Freda sadly.

"At war!" replied Jimmy "who with?"

"With about half of the world" replied Auntie Freda. "'That' President Christian has gone and started a nuclear war with all the countries that wouldn't join the UFSE and come under his rulership."

Even Jimmy at that point looked sad. "This is terrible" he said "all those innocent people being killed for no reason. What is the danger of us getting blown up by a nuclear bomb, auntie?" he asked.

"There's very little chance of that happening, Jimmy" said Auntie Freda "because President Christian has 98% of all the worlds' nuclear weapons."

"Let's hear what's being said on the news" said Uncle Henry as he switched on the radio.

"We have just heard" said the news reader "that President Christian has just launched a nuclear strike at Scotland and the United Republic of Ireland because they refused to join the UFSE."

The radio announcer paused for a moment.

"We have just been given a five minute warning," he continued "radar has just picked up two missiles, which have been launched from Scotland and these are believed to be heading for the south of England and two missiles have been launched from Ireland and these are believed to be heading for Wales."

"Quickly," said Uncle Henry "everyone outside, and get on the train. We need to get to the safety of the cave."

"Come quickly!" shouted Auntie Freda to Sam who was upstairs playing.

Sam stopped what he was doing and came running down the stairs. "What's wrong?" he asked.

"There is no time to explain now, quickly, outside, and get on the train" replied Auntie Freda.

Sam did as he was told without questioning.

As soon as everyone was on board the train Uncle Henry set off driving as fast as he could to reach the boat and the safety of the cave. Jimmy and Sam had never known Uncle Henry to drive the train so fast. In fact he was driving so fast that on several occasions the boys thought the train was about to come of the rails.

When they reached the cave, Uncle Henry shouted "quick, everyone into the lift it's our only chance."

They all got off the train and hurried to the lift and soon they were all in the safety of the cave.

After they had all boarded the boat, which was moored just inside the cave Sam asked "what was the rush for, uncle?"

"We are at war Sam"replied Uncle Henry. "'That' President Christian has gone and started a nuclear war with all the countries that won't come under the rule of the UFSE, and there are nuclear missiles heading in our direction."

"This is terrible" said Sam and he started to cry. "I've left my teddy bear in the cottage."

Auntie Freda smiled and thought to herself "that just what a child would say."

After about ten minutes or so, Uncle Henry said "we aught to find out what happened to those missiles."

"But we can't pick up a radio signal underground" said Auntie Freda.

"That's right," said Uncle Henry "but we can if we plug this wire into that socket on the wall over there. The socket is connected to an aerial at the top of the cliff."

Uncle Henry plugged the wire into the socket and switched on the radio.

"We bring you some sad news" said the radio announcer. "More than half the population of England and Wales has been wiped out. Millions have died through three nuclear explosions. All the major cities in England and Wales have either been wiped out, or severely damaged. The first missile hit about halfway between London and Birmingham destroying both cities and severely damaging the City of Manchester. The second missile struck to the north of Manchester. This bomb totally wiped out Manchester and Carlisle and severely damaged Newcastle. There is hardly a city or town left standing in the midlands. The third missile stuck right in the middle of Wales and left hardly a city or town undamaged. Cardiff was severely damaged but not destroyed. The fourth missile missed England and Wales completely and landed in central Europe.

Later today at 9.00 pm the president of the UFSE, President Joshua Christian, will be on all television channels to give a clear understanding of why this war was necessary."

"I'd like to hear just what 'that' President Christian has to say for himself" said Uncle Henry.

"So would I" said Auntie Freda. "I just don't know what this is world coming too?"

"One thing is for certain" said Uncle Henry "I think that we had better stay here for a while for safety."

"Can we get a television picture on the aerial, Henry?" Auntie Freda asked.

"I can try"replied Uncle Henry.

He switched on the television and fiddled with the tuner and soon they were watching the news.

"What a waste" said Auntie Freda as they all watched the devastation that had been caused by the nuclear bombs. "What does 'that' President Christian think he is doing, and just who does he think he is?!" said Auntie Freda.

"I don't know, Freda, but he has certainly made a real mess of things" replied Uncle Henry.

Later that evening when nine o'clock arrived, Uncle Henry switched on the television.

"In a few moments" said the television announcer "we will be taking you over live to the Royal Presidential Palace in Rome where President Christian has arranged a meeting with those two fanatical preachers from Jerusalem. The president intends to show the two fanatical trouble makers up, once and for all, for what they really are.

But first we bring you a recording of the president which was recorded earlier today."

"My dear European friends," said the president "I expect you are wondering why I started a war with the nations that would not join in the leadership of the UFSE? The answer is very simple, I didn't want to start this war, but the countries involved left me no other choice. As you all know, I am a peace-loving man and do not believe in war at all. However, I sincerely believe that the only way to stop all war is for the whole world to become one nation. I therefore had no choice in going to war with the countries refusing to join the UFSE. By using nuclear weapons I knew that the war would be over far quicker than with conventional weapons. I believe that by going to war I can achieve a one world nation and thus prevent all future wars. You might say, 'that this is a war to end all wars'. Never again will there be any wars on the Earth."

"What a load of rubbish!" said Uncle Henry "who does he think he's kidding?! He's wiped out millions of people as it is, and the world will remain radioactive for a good many years to come."

"I agree with you entirely, Henry" said Auntie Freda "I can't see the reasoning in that. What is the point of going to war, and wiping several million of the world's population in order to try to wipe out war altogether, when there may not have been a war in the first place?"

"We now take you over live to the Royal Presidential Palace" continued the radio announcer "Moses and Elijah are about to enter the great hall of the palace where the president of the United Federal States of Europe sits on his throne."

"**President Christian!**" said Elijah with a loud authoritative voice as he and Moses entered the great hall. "You have angered the LORD GOD ALMIGHTY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, GOD OF HEAVEN AND EARTH with your murderous wicked deed. You have murdered millions of people, and because you have done this wicked deed it will not rain again on the UFSE or any country ruled by it until Moses and I have finished our work on Earth."

"You have spilled innocent blood!" added Moses "and because you have done this wicked act, your palace taps will flow with blood. Both you and all your staff will be covered with boils that will cause every one of you to suffer severe pain for a period of twelve weeks, from yourself down to the lowest of your servants."[8]

With those words Moses and Elijah turned and left the palace unchallenged by the president, his aides, or any of the guards. Everyone was too afraid to say or do anything to Moses and Elijah. They all were too taken aback at what had been said. The words that Moses and Elijah

had spoken struck home like arrows straight to the heart. Even the president was speechless, after all, no-one had ever dared to speak to him like that before. Some of the guards were even a little worried just incase what Moses and Elijah had said came true.

Suddenly there was a scream from the palace kitchen and the chief cook came running out "Mr President! Mr President!" she screamed.

"Whatever is the matter, my dear" said the president calmly.

"Oh, Mr President! Mr President!" replied the chief cook "when I turned on the tap to get some water to prepare the meal, instead of water, it was blood!"

Before President Christian had time to say anything, he suddenly felt a severe pain on his arms and legs and when he looked he found that he had suddenly grown large boils. It wasn't long before all his aides, palace guards, and all his servants had also grown boils.

"Well," said Auntie Freda "what do you make of that, Henry?"

"I don't know," replied Uncle Henry "I've never heard anyone speak with such authority. It was as though they were speaking words that came directly from the mouth of God Himself. If what they say is true, then it's a good thing we've got a special water desalination and purifying system built into the boat, and we can get our water directly from the rivers and the sea otherwise we could be in big trouble."

"Can we go back to the cottage now, uncle?" said Sam.

"Providing that there's no more nuclear bombs, I don't see why not" replied Uncle Henry.

On their way back to the cottage Jimmy couldn't help noticing that the rain which had started when they were on their way to the cave and continued all day had now stopped.

"It, it's stopped raining" he stammered.

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda and the boys all looked at each other in amazement.

"I don't understand it Uncle" said Jimmy "it's been raining so hard all day, and now it has stopped."

"Could it be possible that Moses and Elijah really are messengers sent from God?" Jimmy asked.

"I don't know, Jimmy" replied Uncle Henry "but if they are, then President Christian is in big trouble."

The next day Uncle Henry asked "how would you boys like to go and see Old Joe this afternoon?"

"Oo, yes, please!" replied the boys.

When they had helped Auntie Freda with the washing up, they and Uncle Henry set off for the village to visit Old Joe.

On arrival Old Joe greeted them all with a smile.

"It's nice to see you all" he said. "To what do I owe the pleasure of this visit?"

"We just thought that we would pay you a visit"replied Uncle Henry.

"It's terrible news about the war isn't it?" said Old Joe.

"It certainly is," replied Uncle Henry " I don't know what President Christian thinks he is doing starting this war."

"Neither do I"replied Old Joe "but I suppose he has a reason, although I don't totally agree with what he said last night on the telly."

"Did you see the bit about Moses and Elijah?" Jimmy asked.

"I certainly did" replied Old Joe "and you know the strangest thing happened. It was raining really hard here in the village. A right old thunderstorm it was too, it was so bad, that it was like a cloud burst, but as soon as Elijah said that it wouldn't rain anywhere in the UFSE, it just, all

of a sudden stopped raining. I just couldn't believe it. It didn't gradually stop raining, it just suddenly stopped. One minute in was raining and the next it wasn't."

"Do you think that Moses and Elijah are sent from God?" Jimmy asked.

"I don't know whether they are sent from God or not Jimmy, but it scared me I can tell you" replied Old Joe.

"How would you boys like a drink of pop?" he asked.

"Yes please" replied Jimmy.

"Have a sweet as well" said Old Joe.

"Thank you" replied the boys.

"You spoil them" said Uncle Henry.

"I know," replied Old Joe "but you know how much I love children. Jimmy and Sam are such good boys. I only wish that my wife and I had, had more children before she died. Still I've got my son and grandson."

"How are your family?" Uncle Henry enquired.

"They're fine, you know of course about, what happened to Sarah" replied Old Joe with a tear in his eye.

"I'm sorry" said Uncle Henry "I didn't mean to upset you."

"That's all right Henry" replied Old Joe "my son Tom and his wife Ann and my grandson Tommy are taking me out for a meal in Oaktree Garden City this evening. I'm really looking forward to it. It was Tommy's idea, he's a really good lad."

Uncle Henry looked at Jimmy and Sam and they both looked back at him. They were all remembering the time that Tommy had stayed at the cottage.

"I'm sorry, Henry" said Old Joe "I forgot to offer you a cup of tea, would you like one?"

"Yes please" replied Uncle Henry "that would be very nice."

Old Joe went off to make the tea and soon returned with a fresh pot, and he and Uncle Henry had a nice chat.

"Would you boys like to play on the electric train set in the backroom?" asked Old Joe.

"Oo! yes, please!" said Sam.

Old Joe took Uncle Henry and the boys into the backroom where there was a large model railway. When the boys saw it, their eyes nearly popped out of their heads. There before them was a four-track main line model railway with branch line coming off the main line in all directions. There were trains running in all different directions all at the same time.

"Wow," said Jimmy "this is brill! I didn't think it would be anything like this."

"Joe is a member of the local railway modeller's club," said Uncle Henry "how is the club going, Joe?"

"Fine," replied Old Joe "although I think we could still do with a few more members."

"Can we join please, uncle?" Jimmy asked longingly. He thought that if they joined he would be able to make a train set just like Old Joe's.

"I'm not making any promises" replied Uncle Henry.

"I'll tell you what, Jimmy" said Old Joe "if it's all right with your uncle I'll take you and Sam to the club sometime."

"That would be smashing" said Jimmy.

"Anyway, how about playing with the train set" said Old Joe. "What sort of train would you like to run, Sam, a passenger or a goods?"

"I'd like an express passenger train please" said Sam.

"I'd like the same, please" said Jimmy.

"That just leaves you and me to run the slow goods trains, Henry" said Old Joe "or would you rather be the signalman?"

"I think I'd rather be the signalman, please, Joe" replied Uncle Henry.

The boys really enjoyed running the main line trains and Uncle Henry had a great time being the signalman, however, he nearly caused a major derailment twice. Jimmy and Sam kept getting annoyed when Uncle Henry kept routing their trains around the branch line. "Sorry boys, there's major repairs on the main line so a diversion is needed" he kept on saying.

They were all having such a wonderful time that they didn't notice how the time had flown.

"Is that the time?" said Uncle Henry as he looked at his watch. "I'm afraid we'll have to be going boys, or your aunt will wonder what has happened to us all" he said.

"Ah" said Jimmy "can't we stay a little bit longer?"

"Sorry, boys, but it's time to go" replied Uncle Henry.

"Thank you for having us" said Jimmy.

"And thank you for letting us play on the train set" Sam added.

"It's been a pleasure" replied Old Joe "you must all come again sometime."

When they arrived home, there was Auntie Freda waiting with a smile to greet them on the doorstep.

"Have you all had a nice time?" she asked.

"Yes," replied Sam "we've been playing on Old Joe's train set."

"They've had a wonderful time, Freda" said Uncle Henry.

"I thought that they would," said Auntie Freda "Old Joe really loves children. It's a pity that he didn't have more."

"That's just what Old Joe was saying this afternoon" said Uncle Henry.

"Let's all go in for tea, and you boys can tell me all about your wonderful afternoon" said Auntie Freda.

After tea Uncle Henry put the on radio just in time for the start of the news.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the radio announcer. "The war is over. Early this afternoon the last of the countries at war with the UFSE surrendered to President Christian. The UFSE now rules the entire world. We now take you over live to the Royal Presidential Palace in Rome to speak to the president not only of the UFSE, but also the president of the entire planet.

Mr President" continued the radio announcer "the World has never had a one world leader before, what are your aims and goals for the World at this time.

"My main aim is for all wars to cease and it is also my main aim now for us all to live at peace with one another."

"Mr President" said James Johnson "there is widespread anxiety throughout the UFSE because of what Moses and Elijah said at the Palace yesterday, what do you make of it?"

"I wouldn't worry about those two fanatics" replied the president "they have been following me around for ages and causing no end of distress and worry to lots of people."

"But it stopped raining, didn't it?" enquired James.

"How dare they interfere in the world peace that I have brought about," continued the president. "Even though I am a man of peace I intend to show those two fanatics what it means to try to interfere. If they wish to bring judgement on the UFSE then they must reap the consequences. All they seem to want is war and I will not have anyone take away the peace that I have recently brought into the world. If it is war that they want then they leave me no alternative but to search them out and destroy both them and the place where they live with fire.[9]

Could I also state that I intend to bring in a one world religion which will incorporate all of the world's religions. All other religions will be banned, especially worshipping the God of those two fanatical preachers, Moses and Elijah. Because they are enemies against the State, anyone found worshipping their God will be treated as a traitor and will be executed."

"Thank you Mr President, I'm sorry to stop you there but we have run out of time" said James "I'm sure that we will all sleep better in our bed's tonight after hearing that."

"Thank you James" replied the president.

"We now go over to the weather centre to see if they can shed any light on why it stopped raining so suddenly?" said James Johnson the news reader. "Why did the rain stop so suddenly?" he asked the weatherman.

"We, here, at the weather centre are really scratching our heads" the weatherman replied. "One minute it was pouring down with rain and the next minute it stopped. We were watching the weather from the weather satellite when Elijah said that it would not rain on the UFSE. As soon as he said those words, every rain cloud that was over the UFSE just vanished."

"Is there any chance that your equipment was faulty?" James asked.

"Absolutely not" replied the weatherman "we had only just had the equipment checked over earlier that day, and we also had it checked after the event, and no faults showed up."

"Is there any chance that the satellite was at fault?" James asked.

"There's no chance of that either" replied the weatherman. We checked the satellite out when it passed over other countries that were not at that time in the UFSE and it showed rain clouds in other parts of the world."

"Thank you" said James Johnson "now for the rest of the news."

"I think I've heard enough of the news for one day"said Uncle Henry as he switched off the radio.

"What do you make of that, Freda?" he asked.

"I'm wondering whether Moses and Elijah really are sent from God after the way it stopped raining at their word?" replied Auntie Freda. "If they have got power over the elements then maybe they are?"

"It's possible, I suppose" replied Uncle Henry "but I don't know. Anyway one thing is for sure, if there is to be no rain then we are going to have to get all our water from the boat and we won't be able to take a bath or shower in the house when the taps run dry."

"Yippee" shouted Jimmy "no more baths or showers."

"Don't get to excited Jimmy" said Uncle Henry "there's a shower on the boat and we are not likely to run out of water there."

"Ah" replied Jimmy.

Later that night Jimmy heard the noise of thunder in the distance.

"Listen everybody" he said "there's a storm coming."

Everyone stopped what they were doing to listen.

"Why, so there is Jimmy" said Auntie Freda.

The storm gradually grew louder until it was overhead.

"Look," said Sam "look out of the window, it usually rains when there is a storm but there is no rain."

"It looks like Moses and Elijah really are sent from God"said Jimmy.

"I don't know about that, Jimmy, I have known it not to rain during a thunderstorm many times but I must admit it does seem rather odd" said Uncle Henry.

"Anyway it's been a tiring old day and I was thinking of taking you all out for a trip on the

boat tomorrow morning so it might be a good idea if we all went to bed."

The next day when he picked up the morning newspaper Uncle Henry asked "have you seen the headline in this morning's paper, Freda?"

"No, I haven't had chance yet" she replied.

"Listen to this"said Uncle Henry "at 9.00 pm GMT or 10.00 pm Central European Time, yesterday, there were thunderstorms throughout the whole of the UFSE none of which had any rain. At 12.00 am Central European Time the Royal Presidential Palace in Rome was struck by a bolt of lightning and was burned to the ground. All of the Presidents aides and all of his servants were killed in the fire.[9] Only the president himself managed to escape and was taken to the hospital for a checkup. He is believed to be in good health after his ordeal. The firefighters did all that they could to save the lives of the presidents aides and servants but were beaten back by the fire. The strange thing is that the more they fought the fire the bigger it seemed to become. Putting water and foam onto it only seemed to feed the flames."

"Let's hear more about it on the news" said Auntie Freda as she switched on the radio.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the radio announcer. "At midnight Central European Time the Royal Presidential Palace in Rome was struck by a bolt of lightning and burned to the ground. All of the Presidents aides and servants without exception were killed in the fire that ensued and consumed the palace. The president has been taken to the Royal Palace Hospital in Rome for observation.

We now take you over live to the Royal Palace Hospital where our on the spot reporter Roger Thomas is speaking with the president."

"Thank you James" said Roger Thomas. "Mr President, can you describe for the listeners as to just what happened last night?"

"At about midnight" replied the president "both I and my aides were discussing affairs of state when there was a blinding flash of light and a loud bang and the whole palace was engulfed in flames. It was every man for himself, there was no time to try to rescue anyone, it all happened so fast. The whole palace was engulfed in flames within seconds."

"I'm sorry to have to interrupt you Roger" said James Johnson "but we have just been given some very important news.

We have just learned that due to the war the stock market has crashed and it is the biggest crash that the world has ever known. It could mean that there will be massive hyper-inflation.[10] This crash is not just local to one country but is worldwide.

We now hand you back to Roger Thomas in Rome to find out what the president has to say about this."

"Thank you James" said Roger Thomas. "Mr President you heard the news, what can you say to our listeners to reassure them?"

"My dear European friends" replied the president "and of course all those who have recently joined the UFSE, you don't need to worry I have everything under control. My aides and I, were only discussing last night, before the lightning struck, a scheme that will see that all the peoples of the world will be fed, but at this time I am not prepared to divulge what it is, because it is still in the planning stage, and of course because of last nights events it may take a little longer to implement. I assure everyone that this war was absolutely necessary to achieve world peace."

"If we're going out for the day I think that we had better turn off the news and be on our way" said Uncle Henry.

"Can we go on the train to the boat?" Sam asked.

"It's such a nice day, Sam" replied Uncle Henry "I think it would be nice to have a walk. The

fresh air will do us all good."

"I think it will be a good idea too" said Auntie Freda.

When they arrived at the boat, Auntie Freda cast off as usual and Uncle Henry drove the boat out of the cove and onto the open sea.

They had been travelling for about an hour when they sighted a small marina and decided to stop off for a few minutes.

"What's this place called, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"It's called Smugglers' Bay Marina" replied Uncle Henry.

"Is it far from Smugglers' Cove?" Sam asked.

"No" replied Uncle Henry "it's only about five minutes away by road, and about fifteen minutes by sea."

"Can Sam and me go for a swim in the sea, please auntie?" Jimmy asked looking at her longingly with his deep blue eyes.

"You know I always say yes when you look at me like that" said Auntie Freda. "If you ask him nicely, I expect your uncle will take you."

"Aren't you coming as well, auntie?" Jimmy asked.

"I'm afraid not on this occasion I must do a bit of shopping at the supermarket or we'll not have much for dinner" she said.

"Can we take the beach ball please, uncle?" Jimmy asked longingly.

"Of course you can, Jimmy" replied Uncle Henry.

After the boys had got changed, they all set off for the beach. When they arrived, Jimmy and Sam went for a swim and had great fun throwing the beach ball to each other.

Uncle Henry, however, decided to have a sleep in a deckchair but the beach ball kept on landing in his lap.

"Don't keep throwing the ball this way please boys" said Uncle Henry, but Jimmy, pretended that he hadn't heard.

"Please don't do that Jimmy!" retorted Uncle Henry sternly.

"All right" said Jimmy, realising that his uncle was feeling rather tired.

After a while Uncle Henry fell asleep.

"Uncle!" said Jimmy.

"What do you want?" Uncle Henry asked sleepily as he opened his eyes.

"Why is the Sun red?"Jimmy enquired alarmingly.

"What do you mean?" replied Uncle Henry still half asleep.

"Look," said Jimmy "just look at the Sun. It's the middle of the day and the Sun is red" he said feeling rather worried by now.

Uncle Henry opened his eyes and had a look, then he thought for a moment.

"Don't worry Jimmy," he said "it's nothing to worry about. It will be the nuclear fallout from the war. The sky may be full of nuclear fallout clouds for a long time yet, and we may end up with some beautiful Sunrises and Sunsets for sometime to come."

"But shouldn't we take shelter from the fallout?" Jimmy asked worriedly.

"Yes we'd better get back to the boat" said Uncle Henry but he didn't think that it would make much difference.

On the way to the boat they passed a snack bar called Jake's Cafe. Uncle Henry was thinking of taking the boys in and treating them to a drink of pop and a cream cake until he saw the prices. A cup of tea was £10, a cup of coffee was £15, a glass pop was £7, and the cream cakes were £5 each.[10]

A little farther along the road they came to an ice cream van.

"Can we have an ice cream, please uncle?" Sam asked nicely.

"Since you asked me so nicely, how can I refuse?" replied Uncle Henry. "What would you like?"

"I'd like a choc ice, please" replied Sam.

"And what would you like, Jimmy?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I think I would like a choc ice as well, please" Jimmy replied.

"Could I have two choc ices and a cornet, please?" said Uncle Henry to the ice cream man.

"That will be £25, please" said the ice cream man.

Uncle Henry gave a gulp, because he didn't think that he had got £25 on his monetary card.

"I'm not sure if there are enough points on my card" he said.

"I'll check for you sir" replied the ice cream man. "There you go sir, there was enough" he said handing Uncle Henry back his card "you have now got two pounds left."

"Thank you, uncle" said Jimmy as they left the ice cream van.

"Yes thank you" said Sam "I really like choc ices."

"I think we should get back to the boat before I spend what little money I have left on my card" said Uncle Henry.

When they reached the boat, they found Auntie Freda looking rather forlorn.

"Whatever is the matter, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I've just been to the supermarket and I've only managed to buy about three or four items and it's cost me a week's housekeeping" she replied. "I've paid £20 just for a packet of tea."

"I know what you mean, I've just bought three ice creams and it cost me £25" replied Uncle Henry. "I think that we had better go home before we spend all of our money" he said.

"I think that you are right there, Henry" said Auntie Freda "I think we'd better. It's all the fault of 'that' President Christian."

"You may be right there, Freda, you may be right" said Uncle Henry. "I wonder what he's got planned to combat this inflation" he added.

"What's inflation, uncle?" Jimmy asked. "Is it when you pump up the tires on your van?"

Uncle Henry laughed "no, no, Jimmy it's nothing like that, it's when the cost of living rises and you end up having to pay a lot of money for things. It's a bit like those ice creams I bought. Where they would have normally cost only a few pence, they cost me £25."

"Oh I see," said Jimmy "it's a bit like being poor with a lot of money in your pocket."

Uncle Henry laughed again "that's right" he said "I suppose you could put it like that. Anyway I think that it is about time we set sail."

"I'll cast off, and I won't use my knitting needles" said Auntie Freda with a smile. "I thought I'd better say it before you did, Henry" she added.

"How did you know what I was thinking?" said Uncle Henry.

"It was a pretty good guess I suppose" replied Auntie Freda.

After she had cast off, Uncle Henry drove the boat away from the quay side, out of the harbour, and onto the open sea.

They hadn't gone far when the weather began to grow stormy. The small boat was tossed about in the waves, up and down it went.

"I'm frightened" said Sam.

"So am I" said Jimmy as he clung to his aunt.

"Why don't we all go down below and I'll read you a story to take your minds off the storm?" she said as she took the boys down to the living quarters, trying not to show the fact that she too

was feeling frightened.

"Now what shall I read?" she said. "I'll see if there are any books in this locker that are suitable."

As she opened the locker door, a copy of the Gospel According to Mark fell out.

"Now how did that get there?" she wondered.

As she went to pick it up, she noticed that it had fallen open at chapter four, and the passage where Jesus stills the storm caught her eyes.

"Here's a story that is quiet appropriate" she said "it about Jesus calming a storm like this one."

"Will you read it to us please, auntie?" Jimmy asked.

"Yes of course I will," replied Auntie Freda and she began to read *"And the same day, when the even was come, He saith unto them, let us pass over to the other side. And when they had sent away the multitude, they took Him even as He was in the ship. And there were also with Him other little ships. And there arose a great storm of wind and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full. And He was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow; and they awoke Him, and say unto Him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? And He arose and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace be still. And the wind ceased and there was a great calm. And He said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? How is it that ye have no faith? And they feared exceedingly and said one to another, What manner of man is this that even the wind and the sea obey Him?"*

"Wow!" said Jimmy "that is brill. Can Jesus really do all that?" he asked.

"I don't know" replied Auntie Freda "I've never read that story before."

"Well I'm going to asked Jesus if He can help us in this storm" said Jimmy and he began to pray. "Dear Lord Jesus, Auntie Freda has just read to us how you calmed a storm once before. Please would you do it again for us? Sam and me are frightened that we might sink and be drowned in the sea. Please will you help us, Amen?"

No sooner had Jimmy finished praying when Uncle Henry shouted down from the bridge "the storm seems to be calming down, it doesn't seem half as bad as it was five minutes ago, I just don't understand it."

Auntie Freda and Jimmy looked at each other and smiled. "Jesus does answer prayer, auntie?" he asked.

"You could be right there, Jimmy" replied Auntie Freda.

It wasn't long before the storm had subsided and the sea was as calm as a mill pond.

"I just don't understand what happened" said Uncle Henry.

"I do"said Jimmy "I asked Jesus to calm the storm and He did."

"Well the way the storm subsided I'm incline to believe you" replied Uncle Henry.

When they reached the safety of the cove, Uncle Henry moored the boat and they all went back to the cottage.

"What would you all like to do this evening, boys?" Uncle Henry asked.

Jimmy thought for a moment and then he said "I think that I would like to go for a bike ride."

"No can do," said Auntie Freda "'that' President Christian has gone and started the war up again. I've just heard it on the news. I think that we had better take shelter in the cave again" she said.

They all set off for the cave and after they were in the safety and comfort of the boat Uncle Henry said as they arrived "we only just left here a few minutes ago. I suppose we'd better hear the rest of the news" he said as he switched on the radio only to find that he couldn't get a signal.

"Have you plugged in the ariel wire, uncle?" said Sam.

"Oh, yes, of course, silly me" said Uncle Henry with a laugh. He got off the boat and plugged in the ariel wire and they were soon listening to the radio.

"President Christian has again had to fire more nuclear missiles at many of countries of the World" said the news reader. "These countries had stated that they would hand over power to the UFSE but when it came to signing the peace treaty they refused. The president recorded this message this morning just before we went yet again to war."

"My dear European friends" said the president "it is with deepest regret and great heartache that I bring you this news.

As you all know, I am a peace-loving person who doesn't believe in war at all. It is with this in mind that I am determined to stamp it out altogether. The only way to do this is to have a one World government. There are still many countries that are refusing to cooperate and sign the declaration of peace and hand over their sovereignty to the UFSE. I therefore have no alternative but to go to war with them yet again. I am determined to have peace and a one World government no matter how long the fight may take to get it."

"I still don't understand his reasoning" said Auntie Freda.

"Neither do I," said Uncle Henry "it seems so stupid to go to war in order to prevent a war."

"You're right there" said Auntie Freda. "There seems no rhyme nor reason for it at all.

Anyway, would you like a nice cup of tea, Henry?" she asked.

"That would be very nice, thank you dear" replied Uncle Henry.

"And how about you Jimmy?" Auntie Freda asked

"I'd like a lemonade please, auntie" Jimmy replied.

"And what about you Sam?"said Auntie Freda.

"I think I'd like a fizzy blackcurrant" replied Sam.

"Famine and disease have broken out all over the world"continued the radio announcer.

We have just received news that a young boy was attacked by a number of wild squirrels. The boy is said to be recovering in hospital.

In France an elderly man was attacked by a pack of domestic dogs. He was rushed to hospital but was found to be dead on arrival.

In Australia a young housewife was killed when she was attacked by hundreds of koala bears.

In Italy a young man was returning home from work and was savagely attacked by a flock of birds. His condition is said to be stable but serious.

We are also receiving reports from all over the World of other animals, birds, fish, and insects, attacking people.

Whatever has got into these creatures? What seemed to be timid and domestic animals, have suddenly become wild and ferocious?

It has also been estimated that millions of people throughout the world are staving due to a World shortage of food" continued the announcer. "This is due to most of the crops being destroyed during the war. It is estimated that about one quarter of the World's population have died as a result of war, famine, disease or being attacked by the animal kingdom turning wild.[11]

We now hand you over live to the new Royal Palace in Rome where the president waits to give an announcement."

"My dear European friends" said President Christian "the nuclear war is over. All the countries of the World have surrendered to the UFSE. The countries involved in the war have at last signed the declaration of peace. The World is at last one nation. War will now be a thing of the past. You can sleep soundly in your beds knowing that never again will there ever be war

in this World. I know you've probably heard all the other terrifying news, but my good friends, please don't worry about a thing. I have everything under control. I will see to it that there is enough food and medical care for everyone. So please don't lose any sleep over it. Thank you for giving me these few moments of your precious time, and thank you for listening."

He had only just finished speaking when Moses and Elijah entered the great hall of the palace.

"President Christian!" said Moses sternly.

"He's for it now" said Uncle Henry.

"Shush!" said Auntie Freda and the boys "we're trying to listen."

"President Christian!" repeated Moses "you have not yet learned your lesson from the Lord God Almighty.

Yet again you have started a nuclear war which has had a knock on effect and caused one quarter of the World's population to be killed by war, famine, disease, and savaged by animals.

Yet again you have angered THE KING OF KINGS AND THE LORD OF LORDS, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST!

Because you have yet again spilled innocent blood you have brought the wrath of God upon the UFSE. For three whole days, throughout the whole of the UFSE there will be nothing but blood to drink.

For twelve days you will be plagued with flies that will get into your food and cause sickness, to you, and all of your staff. You and your staff will be plagued with lice for the same period of time." With those words Moses and Elijah turned and left the palace.

No sooner had they gone when the president and his staff heard a buzzing noise.

"Mr President, sir, whatever is that noise?!" asked one of his aides worriedly.

"I don't know" replied the president "but I don't like the sound of it."

He had just finished speaking, when into the great hall came a great swarm of flies. There were so many that the air, walls, floor, and ceiling were black with them. At the same time everyone in the room started to scratch their heads. Just as Moses had said, they had all got lice.

"You'd better try the taps as well" said the president to one of his aides.

Sure enough, just as Moses had said, blood came out of the tap when the president's aide turned it on.

"Never mind" said the president "we'll drink wine instead" and he sent one of his servants to get some from the cellar.

It wasn't long before the servant returned with what should have been wine.

"Mr President" he said "all the wine including this bottle, all the bottled water, and lemonade etc. have all turned to blood."

On hearing that news even the president was worried but he tried not to show it. "I will have to think of a way to get rid of these two trouble makers once and for all" he thought to himself.

It was about three weeks later when Auntie Freda said, "I've got some shopping to do and Uncle Henry and I thought that after breakfast it might be nice if we made a day of it and do the shopping at Oaktree Garden City. We could also go swimming in the new swimming pool. Now what's it called? Wonder Water World, that's it" she said.

"Oo!" said Jimmy "that would be smashing."

"You boys can each have a backpack to carry your swimming things in" said Auntie Freda.

After the boys had helped Auntie Freda with the washing up, they set off for Oaktree Garden City.

On arrival Uncle Henry parked the van in the car park.

"Let's get the shopping done first and get it out of the way, then it will leave us free for the

rest of the day"Auntie Freda suggested.

"That sounds a good idea, Freda" Uncle Henry replied

On their way to the shops they had to pass a toyshop. Jimmy and Sam insisted on looking in the window. Jimmy was so fascinated with the toys that he didn't hear Uncle Henry say "I think we'd better be on our way to the supermarket, otherwise we'll never get finished before lunch." When he looked around, Jimmy found that he was all alone outside the toyshop and he began to cry. It was then he remembered the police station just around the corner in the High Street, that he, Auntie Freda, Uncle Henry, and Sam had visited. Perhaps Pc Graham would remember him and help him find his aunt and uncle. As he turned the corner into the High Street, he met two strangers that he thought he recognised from somewhere but he could not think where. One of the strangers picked him up in his arms and said "what's the matter Jimmy?"

Jimmy wondered how this stranger knew his name, but he didn't ask.

"I'm lost" he said "my friend Sam and me stopped to look in a toyshop and when I looked round everybody had gone and I was left all on my own. My auntie, uncle, and Sam had all gone and left me."

"Don't worry, Jimmy" said the stranger "dry your tears. All this has been arranged by the Lord."

It was then that Jimmy recognised who the strangers were. They were none other than Moses and Elijah, and it was Elijah who had picked him up and said "dry your tears." Jimmy knew that he should be feeling really frightened. After all, weren't these the two men who had stood up against President Christian and brought all sorts plagues on the president and the UFSE. But when Jimmy looked into the eyes of Elijah he saw no anger there. All he could see was love and compassion and he felt perfectly at peace.

"Would you like a sweet, Jimmy?" Moses asked. Jimmy thought for a moment. He remembered that his mum and dad, and his aunt and uncle had warned him many times not to take sweets from a stranger, but somehow this seemed different. Even though he had only just met Moses and Elijah, he felt that he had known them for years. So he said "yes, please."

"How about we both take you to have a nice piece of chocolate cake and a nice glass of lemonade?" Elijah asked as they passed a cafe.

Jimmy smiled and said "Oo yes, please, sir!"

"Please feel free to call us by our names" said Elijah.

They went inside the cafe and a smartly dressed lady who was the owner came up to see what they would like. Elijah ordered a glass of lemonade and a piece of chocolate cake for Jimmy and a cup of tea for both he and Moses. It didn't seem to bother Elijah that a glass of lemonade and a piece of cake came to about £5,000.

"I'm sorry sir but we're right out of chocolate cake, in fact we are completely out of food" said the lady "I don't know where my son and I are even going to get our next meal from. I have only one piece of chocolate cake left for my son. I suppose you could have that" she said. "If we are going to starve anyway, I don't suppose one piece of cake will make that much difference."

"God bless you my dear lady"said Elijah "because of your generosity the Lord will bless you. Neither you, nor your son, will run out of food as long as you don't take the mark of the beast."

"The mark of the beast, what's that?" asked the lady.

"You will know when the time comes" replied Elijah.

"Elijah, what did you mean, when you said "all of this has been arranged of the Lord?" enquired Jimmy.

"What I meant" replied Elijah "was that the Lord has sent us to tell you the way of salvation."

"Salvation, what's that?" Jimmy asked.

"Well, Jimmy," said Elijah "we are here to tell you how you can be forgiven of all the naughty things that you have ever done."

"But I'm not a naughty boy" Jimmy quickly replied.

"I know that, Jimmy," replied Elijah "but you not going to tell me that you've never been naughty, are you?"

Jimmy said nothing but he did look a bit sheepish.

"What about the time when your uncle left ten pence on the table and when no-one was looking, you took it?" said Elijah. "Then there was the time when you accidentally broke a window in your dad's greenhouse and blamed it on a gang of bigger boys, when the gang didn't exist? Need I go on?" he added.

Jimmy gave a gulp. "How did you know all that about me?" he asked.

"I didn't," replied Elijah "but the Lord did, He saw it all and revealed it to me. You are a good boy, Jimmy, I know that. If you compare yourself with other children, then you are probably one of the nicest boys there are, but if you compare yourself with God's standard of perfection you fall far short of the mark."

"What standard is that?" Jimmy asked.

"The standard that God has set is that you have to be absolutely perfect in every way and never be naughty, not even once" said Elijah. "God is so perfect that He cannot allow one wrong naughty act into Heaven. If you are naughty even once, you won't be allowed in."

"I'll never be able to get into Heaven then" said Jimmy feeling rather worried.

"Of course you won't, Jimmy" replied Moses "none of us ever could on our own merit. Listen to what it says in the Bible. I'm going to read from the third chapter of the book to the Romans and the tenth verse '*As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one'* and then again in verse twenty three *'For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God'*. When it says sinned, it is referring to the times when we are naughty. Notice that these two verses say that all have sinned. That means that there is absolutely no-one who can get into Heaven by their own merit."

"So what hope is there then?" Jimmy asked.

"There is hope, but this can only be found in the Lord Jesus Christ" replied Moses. "You see Jesus left all of the splendour of Heaven and came down to this old sinful world to die on a wooden cross and rise again on the third day. So that all who look to Him and ask for His forgiveness, will receive eternal life. Let me read you another verse from the Bible. This time it is from the Gospel of John chapter three and verse sixteen *'For God so loved the world, that he gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life'*. It's sad to say that since the Bible was translated into English, the word believe has lost its full meaning. People today think that as long as they believe that there is a God then they are safe, but nothing could be further from the truth. Even the Devil believes that there is a God and he trembles.[12] If I were to say to you, Jimmy, that I believe in you. I wouldn't mean that I believe that you exist."

"No" laughed Jimmy "I'm sitting right here in front of you."

"I would mean that I put my trust in you, I depend upon you" said Moses. "You know, Jimmy, where it says, 'whosoever', in this verse, you can put your own name in its place. Would you like to do that?"

Moses then handed Jimmy the Bible to read for himself. He began to read "*For God so loved* Jimmy, *that he gave His only begotten Son, that* if Jimmy *believes in Him* he *should not perish,*

but have everlasting life. But why would Jesus come to this earth just to die for me?" Jimmy asked.

"He did it because He loves you, Jimmy" replied Elijah. "Jesus loves you so much that He took upon Himself all the punishment that you or I deserve. He left all the splendour of Heaven and was born of a virgin in a draughty old stable. He didn't even have a cot like I expect you had when you were born, Jimmy. He had to make do with sleeping in a feeding trough for cattle. He lived on this Earth for thirty-three years and was tempted to do wrong just like you have been, but He never did one naughty thing in His entire life. He went about doing nothing but good, He healed the sick, raised the dead and cast out demons. In fact He lived the perfect life that you and I should have lived.

At the age of thirty-three, cruel men took Him and nailed Him to an old wooden cross.

On the night He was arrested He went to the Garden of Gethsemane with some of His disciples. He asked them to keep watch while He went to pray. As He did so He sweat as it were great drops of blood falling to the ground. His soul was in agony knowing that He was going to be stained by sin, the very thing He detested. He also knew that He was going to be forsaken by His Father for the first time in all of eternity. He prayed "Father if it be possible let this cup pass from me." When He returned He found His disciples asleep. He went away again and prayed "O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me except I drink, your will be done" and again when He returned He found His disciples asleep. He went away a third time and prayed the same thing.

Shortly after, Judas, who was one of Jesus disciples betrayed Him with a kiss.

All of his disciples turned away from Him in His hour of need. One of them even denied knowing Him three times. Jesus was arrested and taken from judgement hall to judgement hall in the dead of night. He was whipped beyond measure. Every lash tore deeply into the flesh of Jesus. They plucked the beard from his face. They placed a crown of thorns on his head which sank deep into His brow.

After the beating Jesus had to carry His own cross, but on the way to be crucified, He collapsed under the weight of it because He was so weak from the beating. Someone else had to help Him carry the cross. He didn't have to do any of this but He did it because He loves you and me. He could have called on His Heavenly Father and He would have sent down twelve legions of angels to come and rescue Him. Instead He allowed them to take Him. When they reached the place called Golgotha, they crucified Him between two common thieves. Some of those standing around scoffed at Him saying "if you be the Christ come down from the cross." As Jesus was hanging there on the cross He cried "Father forgive them, for they know not what they do."

"How could Jesus forgive all of those people who had treated Him so cruelly?" interrupted Jimmy who by now was in tears because of the love he had seen for the first time in Jesus.

"It's because He loves us so much" replied Elijah.

At the sixth hour of the day there was a terrible darkness all over the land.

At the ninth hour Jesus cried out "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" When Jesus had shouted in a loud voice "**it is finished**" He said "Father into your hands I commit My Spirit" then He died, but He rose again on the third day and is now seated at the right hand of God the Father."

"It is finished?" interrupted Jimmy "what is finished?"

"The way of forgiveness, the Devil is defeated, there is power to be victorious over our naughtiness, and victory over death and the grave" replied Elijah, "but Jesus didn't stay dead.

On the third day He rose up from the grave and is alive today.

You are now living in the period known in the Bible as the Tribulation. This period lasts for only seven years. In a matter of a few short years from now the Lord Jesus is going to return to Earth. This time not as a little baby born in a stable but as the ALMIGHTY KING OF KINGS AND THE LORD OF LORDS. He is going to rule this World, not President Christian.

Oh Jesus loves you so much, Jimmy. If only you will invite Him into your life, but to be fair I must warn that it may bring upon you the anger of President Christian and cost you your life."

"I don't care" replied Jimmy "if Jesus loves me that much, I will ask Him into my life whatever the cost, but what do I have to do?"

"Well, firstly" replied Elijah "you must be willing to repent. Do you know what that means?"

"No" replied Jimmy.

"Well," said Elijah "it means you have to be willing to turn away from everything you know to be wrong.

Secondly you need to ask Jesus to come into your life and forgive you."

"But I don't know what to say" said Jimmy.

"I'll tell you what, Jimmy," said Elijah "I'll pray line by line and you pray after me."

"Ok" said Jimmy.

"Dear Lord Jesus," Elijah began "I realise that I am sometimes naughty. I don't want to be naughty and I am willing to change. Please will you forgive me all the bad things that I have done in my life. I do want to change. Thank you for giving Your life for me on the cross. I put my trust in You and You alone to forgive me and one day to give me a home in Heaven. Thank you for dying for me. I want to follow You for the rest of my life, whatever the cost. Thank you Jesus, Amen." Jimmy repeated the prayer line by line just as Elijah had asked him too.

"If you meant that prayer with all your heart Jimmy, you can rest assured that you will one day spend the whole of eternity with Jesus" said Elijah.

"Oo, that will be smashing!" said Jimmy "I did mean every word."

"We going to give you this Bible" said Elijah "which I would like you to read and study everyday. I would also like you to take time to pray everyday."

"Thank you" said Jimmy.

"Reading the Bible and praying is the best way to get to know the Lord better" said Elijah.

"We'd also like to give you these two books" said Moses. "The first one is called 'Is There Any Hope For This World' this book takes you through Bible prophesy and shows you from the Bible what is going to happen in the next few years. The second is called 'Better Understanding Of The Bible For Children' and this book will, as its title suggests, help you get a better understanding of the Bible. It gives you a daily reading and will also help you to interpret the Bible correctly."

"Thank you," said Jimmy, with a big smile that went from ear to ear. "Thank you for the Bible and the books and telling me how I can be sure that I get to Heaven. I'll read the Bible everyday and I can't wait to tell my auntie and uncle, and Sam that I met you and how I've come to know Jesus."

"Jimmy," said Elijah "they won't believe you at first, but don't be discouraged. Continue to live the Christian life and let them see the change in you and eventually you will win them over.

You could also tell your aunt that her prayer will be answered at Smugglers' Cove."

"I will," replied Jimmy "I wonder what he meant by that" he thought to himself.

After he put the Bible, along with the books, into his backpack, he went over and gave Elijah a big hug and said "thank you again for telling me how to be saved" he then did the same to

Moses.

"Don't thank us" said Elijah "it was the Lord who arranged this meeting and gave you the opportunity to be saved. It's Him you need to thank."

"I'll do that" said Jimmy and he closed his eyes and began to pray. As he did so there were tears of joy in his eyes. "Oh, thank you, thank you, Jesus" he said "thank you for sending Moses and Elijah to tell me how to be saved, and thank you for saving me. Thank you for coming down from Heaven just to save me. Why should You, the King of the universe want to die for me? Thank you Jesus, I love You with all my heart, and I'll do anything for You. I do love You and I want to serve You for the rest of my life, Amen."

When he opened his eyes Moses and Elijah had gone. Jimmy went outside to look for them and as he did so, he met Auntie Freda who was on her way to the police station, and looking very worried.

"Jimmy!" she screamed with delight, and she picked him up in her arms "we've been looking for you everywhere, where have you been?"

"Oh, auntie, I've had the most wonderful experience. I met Moses and Elijah, and they told me how to be saved and I've come to know Jesus!"said Jimmy excitedly without taking a breath.

"That's nice," said Auntie Freda who was only half listening "we'd better find your uncle and Sam"she said. "I left them outside the toyshop where we lost you."

She took Jimmy back to the toyshop where Uncle Henry and Sam were waiting. "Jimmy!" said Uncle Henry as he picked him up in his arms "where have you been, we've all been so worried?"

"I've been with Moses and Elijah" Jimmy replied and they told me how to be saved and I've come to know Jesus."

"You couldn't have," said Uncle Henry "I've just heard them on the radio telling off President Christian."

"But I have"said Jimmy crossly stamping his foot on the ground after Uncle Henry had put him down.

"Now behave yourself Jimmy, or you won't go swimming," said Uncle Henry sternly "that's no way to behave when we've brought you out for the day."

"I'm sorry uncle" said Jimmy "but why won't anybody believe me?"

"Well it does sound a bit of a tall story" said Auntie Freda. "Why would Moses and Elijah want to come all the way over to England just to talk to one person?"

Even Jimmy's best friend Sam didn't really believe him. Jimmy felt so discouraged and then he remembered what Elijah had said about them not believing at first, but that he was to live a Christian life before them, so he said no more.

"Anyway you're found, now," said Uncle Henry "so why don't we just let the matter drop."

"That's a good idea" said Auntie Freda.

"I know," thought Jimmy to himself "I was lost, but Jesus found me."

"Let's have lunch in the park before we go swimming" said Uncle Henry.

When they reached the park, they found a nice spot down by the pond. There were lots of baby ducks swimming about.

"Can we feed them?" Sam asked.

"Why not," said Uncle Henry "but don't give them any of aunt's cooking, we don't want to be responsible for poisoning the poor little ducks."

Jimmy and Sam laughed, they thought it was so funny.

"Don't be cheeky," said Auntie Freda with a smile "I know someone who won't be getting any

lunch."

"My darling Freda," said Uncle Henry with a laugh "you are the best cook in the whole wide world."

"I wonder what changed your mind" said Auntie Freda.

"Well you have got such a really nice way of explaining things" said Uncle Henry and they all had laugh.

"We are silly, aren't we?" said Auntie Freda.

Jimmy and Sam had a really nice time feeding the ducks, as they did so the fish in the pond started coming up to the surface and take the bread.

"Wow" said Jimmy "that was a big fish."

"I don't know when I've seen a fish that size" said Jimmy.

"Uncle, we aught to have brought the fishing tackle," said Sam"we could have caught lots of fish, there are loads in here."

"I would've brought you here to do some fishing sometime ago, but it's not allowed in the park" replied Uncle Henry.

"I think it might be a good idea if we were to have a walk around the park and walk off our lunch before we go swimming" he added. "It's not a good idea to go swimming on a full stomach."

After a good walk they set off for Wonder Water World. On arrival Uncle Henry said to the girl at the pay desk "I like it here the water is always so clean. It is one of the cleanest swimming pools I know of."

"It is now, sir" replied the girl "we've only just been able to reopen. It's the fault of that Moses and Elijah. It has taken us almost a week to clean up the pool after they turned the water to blood. I really don't know why they have to be so nasty and mean. President Christian is really nice, and all those two can do is be nasty to him, and everyone around him. I believe that he is God. He is so wonderful, but all Moses and Elijah can do is be nasty. It's all their fault, and I lost a weeks wages whilst the pool was being cleaned!

I'm sorry," said the girl "I get carried away sometimes, how can I help you?"

"I'd like two adults and two children for the swimming pool and the double splash flume" said Uncle Henry.

"She's certainly got it in for Moses and Elijah" said Auntie Freda as soon as they were out to the girls hearing.

"I like Moses and Elijah," said Jimmy "they're really nice people."

"Now let's not start that again Jimmy, about you having met them" said Uncle Henry.

"Ok" said Jimmy and with that he shut up.

"How strange," thought Uncle Henry "that's not like Jimmy. Normally he would have argued, but this time he's just accepted it. Are you feeling all right Jimmy?" Uncle Henry asked inquisitively.

"I've never felt better" Jimmy replied with a big smile of contentment. Even Sam noticed the difference.

After they had all got changed Jimmy and Sam went on the double splash flume whilst Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda decided to go for a sedate swim in the pool. The boys had lots of fun on the flume. It had been named the double splash flume firstly because halfway down there was a pool of water everyone had to go through before reaching the bottom.

Secondly it wasn't just one flume, it was two flumes side by side, so that you could have race with a friend to see who could get to the bottom first. For safety reasons the flume ended in two

separate pools that were adjacent to each other.

After about two hours it was time to go home, but boys didn't want to come out because they were having such fun. Uncle Henry let them have an extra half an hour before they all got changed and set off for home.

"We had a pretty eventful day," said Uncle Henry "has everyone enjoyed themselves?"

"Yes," said Sam "it's been really nice, uncle."

"It's been the best day of my entire life," said Jimmy "I've never had such a wonderful day."

"Whatever has happened to Jimmy, Freda?" said Uncle Henry "I've never known him to be so happy and contented, he seems so different." Jimmy didn't say anything he just smiled.

When they got home Auntie Freda made them a really nice tea. Jimmy couldn't help noticing that she had made him his favourite tea with all his favourite food.

"Thank you Jesus for giving me my favourite food" he said under his breath "I really do love You."

After tea they played board games until it was time for the boys to go to bed. Before going to sleep Sam came into Jimmy's room. "Jimmy" he said "I've noticed a real change in you. What did really happen to you today?"

"Well, it's a long story," replied Jimmy "where would you like me to begin?"

"How about where you got lost?" said Sam.

"Well," said Jimmy "you know when we were looking in the toyshop window at all those nice toys?"

"Don't I just?" said Sam "I'd love to have had that train set in the window."

"There I was," said Jimmy "looking in the toyshop window, when I turned round you'd all gone and I was left on my own. I was frightened and I began to cry and wondered how I would get back home, then I remembered the police station we visited was just round the corner. So I started to make my way there. When I turned the corner, I met two men I thought I recognised. One of them picked me up and said "what's the matter Jimmy" and I told him what had happened. Then he said "don't worry, Jimmy, dry your tears. All this has been arranged by the Lord." It was then that I recognised who these two men were. They were none other than Moses and Elijah, and I was being carried by Elijah."

"Did you really meet Moses and Elijah?!" Sam asked excitedly.

"Yes I did," said Jimmy "but no-one will believe me. They told me how to be saved and how to know that I will one day live with Jesus forever."

"Well I believe you, Jimmy" said Sam.

"You didn't earlier, and you're my best friend" replied Jimmy "what made you change your mind?"

"I'm not sure, I think it is because you seem so different," said Sam "you're so much nicer. Anyway, please carry on with the story."

"Now where was I?" said Jimmy.

"You got to the bit where Elijah picked you up and you recognised him" said Sam.

"I knew that I should have felt frightened but somehow I didn't, and when I looked into the eyes of Elijah all I could see was love and compassion. I felt such peace, and I felt that I had known them for years. They took me for a lemonade and a piece of chocolate cake."

"I wish I'd been there" said Sam.

"They told me how to be saved," said Jimmy "and I asked Jesus to forgive me for all the times I had been naughty, and He did."

"But Jimmy, you're not a naughty boy" said Sam.

"I know," said Jimmy "that's what I said. Then Elijah started to tell me of some of the naughty things that I had done that only I knew about."

Jimmy then went on to explain all that Moses and Elijah had said about Jesus, and Sam listened with interest.

At that moment Auntie Freda came in with a cup of hot chocolate for Jimmy and Sam.

"Jimmy was just telling me how he met Moses and Elijah" said Sam.

"You don't really believe that, do you Sam?" Auntie Freda asked.

"Yes" said Sam "I do."

"Jimmy couldn't have met them," said Auntie Freda "Uncle Henry heard them on the radio as he was passing a shop, and they were telling President Christian off, and he lives in Rome."

"It could have been a recording, auntie" said Jimmy.

"I almost forgot!" he added "Elijah told me to tell you that your prayer will be answered at Smugglers' Cove."

When Jimmy said that, it made Auntie Freda think back to the time she prayed when she was on the beach just after the Rapture had taken place. She remembered how she had asked the Lord to show her, and Uncle Henry and the boys the way of salvation, and she began to wonder whether Jimmy really had met Moses and Elijah.

"I think it's time you boys were settling down to sleep" she said. "It's way past your bedtime."

"Can I read for a little while to help me sleep, please auntie, I'm not tired?" Jimmy asked looking at his aunt longingly with his deep blue eyes.

"I suppose so" replied Auntie Freda kindly "but I do wish that you wouldn't look at me like that, you know I always give in when you do."

"Can I read as well, please auntie?" Sam asked.

"Yes, but you must go back to your room and get into bed" replied Auntie Freda "and don't read too long, the same goes for you too, Jimmy."

"All right , auntie," said Jimmy "I won't."

After his aunt had gone downstairs Jimmy got out his Bible he had been given that day, along with the other books, and he read for about half an hour.

After that, he decided to pray. "Lord, what did Elijah mean when he said to tell Auntie Freda that her prayer will be answered at Smugglers' Cove?" he asked. It was then that he remembered that his aunt had prayed about being shown the way of salvation when they all visited East-Hampton on Sea about three years earlier. "Thank you Lord for answering Auntie Freda's prayer for me" he said. "Thank you for sending Moses and Elijah to tell me how to be saved, even if no-one will believe me" he said.

When he had finished praying it was as though the Lord replied and said "they will believe eventually."

"Thank you Lord" said Jimmy "I really do love You, but I must go to sleep now. Goodnight Lord, I'll see You in the morning" he said reverently and lovingly as he turned over and went to sleep.

The next day at breakfast Uncle Henry said "does anyone mind if I listen to the news?"

"No," said Auntie Freda "we might as well find out what mess 'that' President Christian has got us into now."

Uncle Henry got up and switched on the radio.

"Here is the news, and this is James Johnson reading it" said the news reader. "A group of about twenty followers of Jesus of Nazareth were arrested for worshipping Him yesterday and

were taken to court in the early hours of this morning. They were all found guilty and will be executed tomorrow. President Christian has stated that anyone caught worshipping Jesus of Nazareth will beheaded.[13]

When the judge passed sentence, this group of Jesus followers seemed to rejoice. One of them shouted at the top of his voice "Hallelujah, what a privilege to suffer and die for my Lord and my God! Jesus of Nazareth is both Lord and Christ! He is THE KING OF KINGS, AND THE LORD OF LORDS, not President Christian!"

We have also heard that hundreds more of these followers of Jesus of Nazareth have been arrested. They were all found guilty of not only being followers of this Nazarene, they were worshipping Him as the Son of God.

The strange thing is that every time one of these followers of Jesus is found guilty they always, without fail, rejoice. It's as though they have no fear of dying.

These fanatics have the audacity to even call themselves by the name of Christian. What an insult to our new messiah President Christian. How dare they use the name 'Christian'?

The president has today announced that the Federal Police are to seek out these followers and arrest them. When found, they will all without fail, be executed. The police have been granted permission to shoot them on sight if need be."

With that Jimmy gave a gulp and at first felt rather worried, but when the Lord had reminded him of the commitment he made when he invited Him into his life, that he would follow Him whatever it cost, he felt perfectly at peace.

"President Christian has stated today" continued the news reader "that the reading of the Bible is to be banned. Anyone found reading one will be arrested and could face a death sentence.

No-one will be allowed to speak in a religious open air meeting without being granted special permission from the president.

A baby was born today cloned from the genes of his father, John Brown. John who lost his wife a year ago desperately wanted a son, so he wrote to President Christian to see if this would be possible. The president wrote back and said that he would see what he could do, and today's birth is the outcome. What a wonderful person our president is!" James Johnson stated.

"The president also said that cloning is an excellent idea for single people and for those who cannot have their own children. From now on they will be able to choose the sex of their children. What an excellent idea this will be!"

"Let's turn the news off," said Uncle Henry "we don't really want the boys listening to that rubbish. There never seems to be any good news on these days."

Uncle Henry was just about to switch the radio off when the announcer said "we have just heard from Rome that Moses and Elijah have yet again entered the Royal Palace."

Uncle Henry's ears pricked up when he heard that, and he decided to listen.

"President Christian!" said Moses sternly in a loud voice "how long will you anger the LORD GOD ALMIGHTY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST? Yet again you have done wicked acts in His sight! You have cloned a human child, and even stated that it would be good to clone more children for people who cannot have their own. You have even stated that from now on, parents to be will be able to decide the sex their children. **Who?! gave you!** the right to play God?! Are there not enough adoption societies for such people?! The Lord God of Israel spared not Sodom and Gomorrah for such iniquity.[14] Just what chance do you think that you have of escaping His judgement?! Because you have done such wicked acts you have brought the Lord's judgement upon the whole world. All rivers, streams, and reservoirs will turn to blood. There will be plagues and pestilence throughout the entire world."

With those words Moses and Elijah turned and left the palace

No sooner had they finished speaking when there was a great earthquake.

"Quick outside everybody, that's the safest place" said Uncle Henry.

They all raced outside to the best of their ability. It was very hard going because the ground was shaking so much that it was hard for them to stand on their feet. Somehow they managed it, but when they got outside to their horror the Sun without any warning turn as black as sackcloth.[15]

"I'm scared" said Sam.

"Don't be frightened, Sam" said Jimmy "the Lord Jesus will look after us."

"Are you sure, Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"Of course I am" replied Jimmy confidently.

"Jesus is my friend, and the control the whole universe is in His Hands. Jesus won't let anything hurt us."

"What faith, Freda," said Uncle Henry "I wish I had a faith like that."

"Look at the sky," said Jimmy "just look at all those falling stars."[16]

"It's a meteor show," said Uncle Henry "but I don't know why we are seeing it right now or what has happened to the Sun."

"It's beautiful, isn't it Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"It sure is" replied Jimmy.

They had no sooner finished talking when the whole sky departed as a scroll when it is rolled together, and there, for all to see was The Lord Jesus Christ seated on His throne.[17]

"Come on everyone run" shouted Uncle Henry in fear "let's get to the safety of the cave where we can be safe from the all seeing eye of God. For the great day of His wrath has come and who shall be able to stand."[18]

Jimmy didn't see what all the fuss was about. He was so awe inspired by the sight that he fell on his face and worshipped Him that sat on the throne. "My Lord and my God" he said. "I love you, I love you" he kept repeating.

"Come on, Jimmy, come on" snapped Uncle Henry impatiently.

To the amazement of Jimmy they all raced to what Uncle Henry thought was the safety of the cave.

The next day when Uncle Henry picked up the morning newspaper he said "have you seen this Freda?"

"What that?" she asked.

"It says here that President Christian is coming to Oaktree Garden City again on the 20th of this month"replied Uncle Henry. "It also says that all citizens will be expected to attend. Failure to do so could incur a fine of anything up to £200,000."

"I don't like the sound of being made to go" replied Auntie Freda.

"Neither do I" replied Uncle Henry "but I don't think we have much choice."

Jimmy didn't like the idea of going either, because he knew that President Christian didn't like followers of Jesus, and he thought that he might be arrested and thrown into prison. "Do I have to go?" he asked sorrowfully.

"Yes," said Uncle Henry "we are not going to go and leave you behind, and besides there might be a funfair, and you know just how much you like them."

"But I don't want to go" said Jimmy stamping his foot.

"It doesn't matter what you want, we are going and that's final!" said Uncle Henry.

At that Jimmy felt sad but he tried to put a brave face on.

"Let's see if it will tell us any more about it on the radio" said Uncle Henry.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the announcer.

"We bring you some awesome and terrifying news.

After the terrifying events of last night, all of the peoples of the world are recovering from seeing that terrible sight in the sky. No-one can really believe what they saw. Some people say that it was Almighty God seated on His throne, but I'm not so sure.

The earthquake which took place last night could not be measured accurately because all the needles went off the scales. Every island has been moved out of its place.[17] Britain is now 7 degrees west of the Greenwich Meridian. Ireland has also move west by 7 degrees west. Cyprus, Sicily, and Malta moved 12 degrees west, and Japan moved 12 degrees east. Even the mighty island of Australia didn't escape. It has moved 7 degrees south east alone with New Zealand and Tasmania. There is not an island in the Pacific, Atlantic, or anyway else in the world that has not been moved out of place by the earthquakes.

CHAPTER FOUR THE GREAT TRIBULATION BEGINS

The morning of the 20th arrived and Jimmy woke early. He felt rather sad and worried when he remembered that he was going to have to go and hear President Christian that day.

"Why do I have to go, Lord?" Jimmy prayed sorrowfully.

As he did so, the Lord reminded him that He was still in control and that He would look after him. At that point Jimmy felt perfectly at peace, in fact he was quite looking forward to it now.

"Thank you Lord" he said.

After breakfast Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys set off for their trip to hear President Christian.

"I think it might be best if we take the bus" said Uncle Henry "it's very likely that there will be difficultly parking with all the people that are likely to be there. Old Joe tells me from what he has heard it is likely to be packed, and that they are running free buses to Oaktree Garden City today."

"Yippee" said Jimmy "we're going on the bus."

"I hope it's a double decker" said Sam.

"So do I" said Jimmy.

"I'll pack some sandwiches" said Auntie Freda.

"Can I have some chocolate spread sandwiches please, auntie?" Jimmy asked.

"Can I have some too?" said Sam.

"I was going to make you some" Auntie Freda replied.

"Yippee" said the boys.

Soon it was time to go. They didn't have to wait long before the bus arrived and they all got on board. The journey took about an hour.

When they arrived at Oaktree Garden City, they found that the place was packed just like Old Joe had said, they also found a funfair in the centre of town. Bunting had been put up everywhere.

"Anyone would think that this President Christian was Royalty" commented Auntie Freda.

First they went to Wonder Water World and a great time was had by all. The boys went on the flume lots of times. In fact Uncle Henry had a job to get them off.

Afterward they decided to have lunch in the park where they played of cricket for a couple of hours.

"Can we go to the fair next, please, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"All right" replied Uncle Henry.

"I think I will do a bit of shopping, Henry, while you take the boys on the rides" said Auntie Freda. "There's one or two things I need to get for the week that I couldn't get in the village. I'll meet you at the hall later."

"All right, Freda," replied Uncle Henry "we'll meet you at the main entrance at around seven o'clock."

"I want to go on the dodgems," said Sam.

"And I want to go on the waltzers" said Jimmy.

After the boys had been on the dodgems and the waltzer, and a few other rides, Uncle Henry bought them both a toffee apple each.

"I think that we had better think about getting something to eat for tea," he said "how about some fish and chips?"

"Oo, yes please!" replied Sam "I love fish and chips."

They found a cafe not far from the funfair and went inside and sat down at a table. When the

waitress arrived, she asked "remember me?"

Uncle Henry looked at her for a moment and then said "it's Nora, isn't it? The lady we met at the East-Hampton on Sea about three and a half years ago, it was just after the Rapture."

"That's right" she said.

"How are you?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I'm fine now," she replied "are you going to hear President Christian tonight?"

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "we're all going. Freda will be sorry that she missed you.

You know, ever since we met you, Freda has been very concerned, especially after that night when we had that terrible storm and we saw you taken to the hospital."

"Yes, I was in hospital for three weeks and was very ill" replied Nora. "It was touch and go as to whether I pulled through. While I was in the hospital I fell in love with one of the doctors and we got married about two weeks ago."

"Congratulations!" said Uncle Henry "I hope that you will both be very happy together."

"Thank you" replied Nora "I'm sure that we will be.

Anyway enough talking what would you all like?"

"I'd like fish and chips" said Sam who had begun to think that they would never stop talking.

"And I would like a steak and kidney pie and chips please, uncle" said Jimmy.

"What about drinks boys, or need I ask?" said Uncle Henry. "You'd like lemonade, Jimmy and you'd like fizzy blackcurrant, Sam" he said.

"How did you guess?" said Sam.

"Well," said Uncle Henry "it was just a good guess I suppose. I'd like fish and chips and a cup of tea please Nora."

"I'm really looking forward to hearing the president tonight" said Nora as she brought them their food. "From way he acts and speaks, I think that he is Christ come back to earth.[1] He seems so gentle, so wise and so kind, who else could he be? He is even called Joshua Christian."

"I don't know," replied Uncle Henry "I'd rather wait until I've heard him before I pass judgement."

Just then someone called for a waitress so Nora had to go.

"I hope I see you later on, at the meeting," she said "I'd love to meet Freda again."

"That was a lovely meal, uncle," said Jimmy as he took the last bite "thank you for treating us."

"I enjoyed mine too," Sam added.

"That's all right, boys" said Uncle Henry "I'm glad you both enjoyed it. It's time we were going to the hall to meet your aunt."

After leaving the cafe Uncle Henry and the boys walked through the funfair on their way to the hall. Both Jimmy and Sam wished that they could go on some more rides but there wasn't enough time.

When they reached the hall, there was Auntie Freda waiting for them at the entrance.

"You'll never guess who we've met?" said Uncle Henry. "It was Nora, who we met at East-Hampton."

"Never!" said Auntie Freda.

"She a waitress in Joe's Cafe," continued Uncle Henry "we've had a long talk and she sends her love. She hopes to be at the meeting tonight."

"I'm glad that she is all right" said Auntie Freda "I've been concerned about her."

"I know you have, Freda," said Uncle Henry "she got married again to a doctor she met when she was in the hospital."

"Really!" said Auntie Freda in surprise "I'm really pleased for her."

"I think that we had better find a seat, otherwise, we may have to stand up" said Uncle Henry.

As they went into the hall, an usher showed them to their seats. There were just four seats on the end of a row. From where they sat, they had a good view of the platform. Jimmy insisted on sitting next to the aisle. He thought that if someone rather tall were to sit in front of him he could stand in the aisle where he could see.

The hall was packed with several thousand people inside and even more outside listening over loudspeakers and watching on a large television screen.

"I'm thirsty" said Jimmy.

"You will have to wait" replied Uncle Henry "the meeting is about to begin."

"I feel rather uncomfortable about being here, Henry" said Auntie Freda. "On my way here I heard two men speaking about what Nora said had happened to all those millions of people who disappeared. Now what was it she called it, the Rupture?"

"No, auntie," said Sam laughing "she called it the Rapture."

"Thank you Sam," replied Auntie Freda "the Rapture that was it. Anyway, I heard these two fellows preaching and saying something like "repent for the Tribulation is upon you. The Great and Terrible Day of The Lord is at hand. Repent for the Lord will bring judgment on the Earth for men's wicked deeds. President Christian is not all that he seems to be. He is a wicked and evil man set on fire by the Devil himself. Repent while there is still time." Everyone around was ridiculing them, but I somehow couldn't help wondering if there was anything in what they were saying."

"Well we'll have to stay now Freda, the meeting is about to start, there is no way we can get out now" said Uncle Henry. "In any case there may be nothing in what they were saying."

The meeting started with a brass band playing.

Suddenly there was a fanfare and the chairman said "all rise for the president of the United Federal States of Europe and of course the rest of the World."

Everyone stood to their feet and onto the stage came the president. He was wearing a dark suit and a white shirt and tie. Around his shoulders he wore a scarlet silken robe with a large green dragon embroidered on the back. On the presidents head was a golden crown which was the seal of office for the president of Europe. The crown was studded with ten diamonds.

Auntie Freda took one look at the president and said "I don't like the look of him much, he looks even worse than he does on the telly, he gives me the creeps."

The president began to speak. "My dear European friends, my purpose in visiting your town today is so that I can meet you, my people, and to let you know what I plan to do in the European Federal States of Europe and the rest of the world, but before I speak to you I would like to say something about those two fanatical preachers outside of this hall. Some of you may have been disturbed by them and I want to put your mind at rest. There is absolutely no truth in what they are saying. These two men who call themselves Moses, and Elijah, are nothing but alarmists and a pain in the neck."

"Of course, that's who they were," said Auntie Freda " I didn't recognise them."

"These two fanatics," the president continued "follow me around and cause a lot of upset and problems everywhere I go on this tour. No doubt they have told you not to trust me, and that I am set on fire by the Devil himself. What a joke, I have nothing but good intentions for Europe and as you all know I am a peace-loving person, and have brought peace to countries that you would never have thought it possible. So please don't get upset about what they say, just forget it. I assure you they are talking a load of rubbish."

At that point the audience erupted in applause.

"Anyway," continued the president "I had better get on with my speech.

Firstly, I would like to speak to you about the Federal European Monetary Card. The reason for its introduction is that it is a lot easier to handle than cash. It makes payments easier to other parts of Europe and hopefully other parts of the world. There will be no need to worry about currency or getting travellers cheques when travelling abroad. Each point on the card will be equal to whatever currency you happen to be using at the time. For example one point, will equal £1, $1 or Euro. Banks won't have to worry about transporting large amounts of cash or being robbed because there will be no cash to steal.

Secondly, I intend to divide the UFSE into ten European states.[2] This will be easier to govern than the current number. Each state will have its own government ruling under my authority.

The ten diamonds in my crown represent these ten nations. Great Britain, or should I say England and Wales, France, and Germany will no longer have the right to veto decisions made in Rome, but will loose their separate identity and will become part of one larger state which will be made up of Britain, France Germany and Italy.[2] Other states will also be joined together to make larger states.

A new UFSE flag has now been designed which is scarlet in colour and en-corporates ten stars in the original circle which represent the ten states of Europe. In the circle will be a large green dragon. This represents the might of the UFSE. The ten states of the UFSE will be the governing body that will rule the rest of the world.

Thirdly, I would like to speak to you about the terrible war we had. As you all know I am a man of peace and I don't believe in war at all. It was very regrettable, and it was with great sorrow that I had to have a war with those countries failing to give up their sovereignty to the UFSE. I firmly believe that the only way to stamp out war once and for all is to have a one world government, and I believe that it is the only way ahead. Where there are different government's scattered about the world there is the inevitable risk of war. War is a terrible thing and by making a one world government, war is now stamped out forever. A one world government also makes better economic sense and will make trade between counties a lot easier.

Fourthly, there will be one religion throughout Europe and the world. This will consist of all faiths of the world. This will be overseen by my good friend here, Father Wright, and will incorporate all of the religions of the world.[19] He is also known for his miraculous powers. Would you stand to your feet Father Wright so that everyone can see who you are?"

Father Wright stood to his feet and everyone applauded.

"I don't like the look of him either," said Auntie Freda quietly to Uncle Henry "he also gives me the creeps."

"Having a one world religion" continued President Christian "will prevent religious hatred. Everyone will be worshipping the same god in the same way, so there can be no hatred in the name of religion.

The reading of the Bible is now outlawed. Anyone found with one, or reading one will be executed. From now on, anyone mentioning the Name of Jesus of Nazareth without a good cause will be flogged and beheaded.

I also believe that in making a one world religion, it will prevent a repeat of what happened a few years ago when God judged the wicked people of the world by taking them away in an instant."

With that statement, Jimmy stood to his feet with indignation, and before anyone could stop him, he ran down the aisle, towards the platform, yelling at the top of his voice "my mum and dad were not wicked, and God didn't bring judgement upon them and I love Jesus of Nazareth, and Moses and Elijah are really nice people, they are my friends."

"NO JIMMY"! screamed Auntie Freda, but it was too late. Jimmy climbed onto the platform

and gave the president a hard kick on the ankle. The president made a grab for him, but Jimmy was too quick for the president and he managed to run back down the aisle and out of the door followed by Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and Sam. The president and his aides made chase.

As they were passing an archery stall in the fairground Uncle Henry shouted to Auntie Freda and the boys to carry on running whilst he tried to hold them off.

He picked up a bow and arrow, and fired it in the direction of the pursuing party in order to slow them down. The first two arrows did slow them down, and they took cover, but the third arrow struck the president in the middle of his forehead and he fell to the ground.

"The president is dead!" said one of his aides.

When Uncle Henry saw what he had done, he turned around and started to run off, but as he did so he ran straight into two federal police officers and was arrested. He was taken to Oaktree Garden City police station where he was locked in the same cell that he, Auntie Freda, and the boys had visited only a few years earlier.

"Oh what a fool I've been" he thought to himself. "If only I'd thought of some other way to stop them, I wouldn't be in here now. I will probably be executed for treason to the state. I know what 'that' President Christian and his aides are like. I wish I had stayed at home then none of this could have happened.

I suppose I may as well try to get some sleep" he thought to himself.

He tried to get to sleep but he kept on thinking of what he had done and the possible consequences. He tossed and turned until he finally fell asleep.

It was about one o'clock in the morning when he was awakened by someone shaking him and calling his name. Uncle Henry wearily opened his eyes and there standing before him was someone in white, bright, shining clothing.

"Who are you?" he asked.

"My name is Shalom, and I have been sent from The Kingdom Of The Most High to set you free in answer to your nephew Jimmy's prayer"said the stranger. "I have also been sent to be your guardian until the LORD returns. Come with me" he said.

Uncle Henry got up still half asleep and followed. Shalom opened the cell door and lead Uncle Henry past the custody officer and out of the police station.

Immediately Uncle Henry found himself back on his farm and standing outside the front door of the cottage. He turned around to thank Shalom but he had gone.

"How did I get here?" Uncle Henry thought to himself. "Perhaps I dreamt the whole thing about going to see President Christian and getting arrested."

Just then the front door opened and out ran Jimmy. "Oh, uncle, uncle," he said "God does answer prayer" and he ran and threw his arms around his uncle feeling so relieved to see him. Jimmy was shortly followed by Sam who did the same thing. Auntie Freda followed the boys out and she too gave Uncle Henry a hug.

"Oh, Henry," she said "it is such a relief to see you. The boys were really upset when you got arrested. They were both crying all the way home and I was almost in tears myself."

"You mean, I didn't dream about going to see President Christian, and afterwards shooting him and being arrested?" said Uncle Henry. "Let's all go inside and talk about it and I'll make you a nice cup of tea" said Auntie Freda.

After she had made the tea, they all sat down to talk.

"When we got home" Auntie Freda began "we were all feeling very upset. I knew that none of us would sleep, so I let the boys stay up. It was about one o'clock when Jimmy said "why don't we pray about it? Since I came to know Jesus, I know that He answers prayer." I wasn't too sure that we would get anywhere with praying, but Jimmy seemed to have enough faith, and

it sounded a good idea. So I suggested that he should pray for you. You'd better carry on from here Jimmy" said Auntie Freda.

"Well," said Jimmy "I started to pray and I said something like, "Dear God, my uncle is not a bad man. He was only trying to protect me when he shot President Christian. I'm sure that he didn't mean to do it. Both Sam and me have lost our mums and dads, please, don't take Uncle Henry away from us as well, thank you, Lord, Amen."

When I'd finished praying, I heard the Lord say to me. "I have sent my messenger to set your uncle free. No sooner had I finished praying and listening to God, when I saw you standing at the front door through the window."

"How did you get out, uncle?" Sam asked.

"Well," replied Uncle Henry "I was in prison when someone wearing white, bright, shining clothing came into my cell and said, "I've been sent from The Kingdom Of The Most High to set you free in answer to your nephew's prayer." I think that he said that his name was Shalom. He also said that he was sent to be our guardian until the LORD returns, whatever that meant. Then he said "come with me" and he lead me out of the prison. As soon as I was got outside, I found myself at the front door of the cottage and wondering how I got here, and whether it had all been a dream."

"I think it might be safer if we spend the rest of the night on the boat" said Auntie Freda.

"You could be right there," replied Uncle Henry "the boat is hidden out of sight in the cove."

"How are we going to find the way to the boat in the dark?" Jimmy asked. "We will have to go on the miniature railway" replied Uncle Henry.

They all went outside and got on the train and Uncle Henry drove them all to the top of the cliff and fortunately there was a tunnel there, so Uncle Henry parked the train in the tunnel, out of sight where it couldn't be seen.

They all got off and went down the lift to the old jetty where the boat was moored. "It's much safer here" said Uncle Henry.

In the morning they all woke early to the sound of the birds singing. "I love to hear the dawn chorus, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"So do I, Freda" replied Uncle Henry with a sigh. "I may be free" he commented "but I wonder, just how long I will have to lie low."

Just then Jimmy came running into the cave shouting, "uncle, uncle, come outside and listen to the news on the radio."

Uncle Henry got up wearily and went outside the cave to hear the news.

"President Christian is dead" said the radio announcer.

"Just what I needed to hear" mumbled Uncle Henry as he started back into the cave.

"No wait, uncle, there's better news to come" said Jimmy.

"President Christian was assassinated last night in Oaktree Garden City" continued the announcer. "He was shot at with an arrow fired from a fairground stall. The arrow struck the president in the forehead and he was killed immediately. The president's body will be taken to Rome where he will lie in state for the next two days. After this period he will be taken to a chapel of rest to be prepared for his burial."

"Oh that's great news, thanks a lot, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry "that has cheered me up no end."

"Wait, uncle, the best bit of news is yet to come," said Jimmy.

"We have just heard a few moments ago, that the person responsible for the president's assassination disappeared in the middle of the night without a trace"continued the announcer. We now take you over live to our on the spot reporter Roger Thomas at Oaktree Garden City

Police Station.

"I'm with Sergeant Smith"said Roger Thomas. "So what happened last night to the prisoner."

"Well none of us really know," replied the sergeant "I was the custody officer last night, and when I went the check the prisoner at about two o'clock this morning I found that the cell was empty and the door was securely locked. My first thoughts were that the prisoner was pressed up against the wall and out of sight, so I called some of my colleagues to help me. When we opened the door, we found the cell was empty."

"Is there any way that the prisoner could have escaped?" Roger Thomas asked.

"No," replied the sergeant "we all made a close examination of the cell. There were no tunnels, the bars were completely in tact and the cell door was securely locked, and so was the door to the custody suite. In any case even if the cell door had accidentally been left open, the prisoner would have had to pass me, and I would have seen him."

"You were telling me earlier, before we went on the air, of another strange event" said Roger Thomas.

"That's right," the sergeant replied "the arresting officers can't even remember arresting the prisoner, and what's more when I looked in the custody book I found no record of anyone being arrested last night."

"Thank you Sergeant Smith" said the announcer. "This is Roger Thomas from Oaktree Garden City Police Station handing you back to the studio."

"Well I never! it must have been an angel who came to set me free last night" said Uncle Henry as he went back to the boat to tell Auntie Freda and Sam what he had just heard on the news.

"That is wonderful news, Henry," said Auntie Freda "it must have been in answer to Jimmy's prayer" she said.

"I know, as it is a nice day and God seems to have set you free, Henry, why don't we all go for a ride on the boat this afternoon and celebrate?"

That's a good idea, Freda" said Uncle Henry.

Auntie Freda cast off and Uncle Henry drove the boat out of the cove and onto the sea.

"Can we go to Smugglers' Bay again, please, uncle?" Jimmy asked as they left the safety of the cove and headed out into the open sea.

"I think we might manage that, Jimmy" replied Uncle Henry.

It didn't take long and soon they were mooring along side of the quay at Smugglers' Bay Marina. Auntie Freda went to do a bit of shopping while Uncle Henry and the boys had a look around the harbour.

After they had been walking for about half an hour, Sam said "I'm thirsty uncle."

"So am I" said Jimmy.

"There's a cafe over there, Jake's Cafe, would you like to go in and have something to drink?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Yes please" said Jimmy.

Uncle Henry and the boys went over to the cafe. It was a quaint olde worlde type of cafe. It had pictures on the wall of what the harbour looked like a hundred years earlier.

"This is nice" said Jimmy.

"I like it too" said Sam.

"Yes, it is quite quaint, isn't it?" Uncle Henry replied.

The waiter arrived and asked politely"can I help you sir?"

"I'd like a lemonade, please" said Jimmy.

"And I'd like a fizzy blackcurrant" said Sam.

Jimmy spotted some cream cakes and looking longingly at them and then at his uncle and asked nicely "can I have a cake please, uncle?"

Uncle Henry called the waiter back and ordered two cream cakes one for Jimmy and one for Sam.

After they had all finished their food and drink Uncle Henry said "I think that it is time we were getting back to the boat, your aunt will be wondering where we've got too."

As he went to pay, he couldn't help noticing the headlines on a copy of the Oaktree Gazette which was laid on the pay desk counter, that read 'President Christian is dead'.

"Sad isn't it"said the waiter "I think they should hang the murderer from the highest yard arm don't you, that is, if they ever find out who did it"?

Uncle Henry gulped, "I agree with you" he said, trying not to look at the waiter in case he saw the look of guilt on his face.

When they got back to the boat, Auntie Freda had made them all a lovely tea. "Can we stay here a few days, Henry?" she asked.

"I don't see why not," Uncle Henry replied "what would you like to do boys?"

"We'd like to stay," said Jimmy "wouldn't we Sam?"

"You bet" Sam replied.

"Can we go down to the beach for a while after tea, please?" Jimmy asked.

"I think we can manage that" replied Uncle Henry.

After tea they spent all evening on the beach playing cricket until it was time to return to the boat and Jimmy won by one hundred runs.

It was about three days later when Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda were watching the television when there was a newsflash.

"We interrupt this programme to bring you an important news bulletin" said the news reader.

"President Christian is alive! I repeat the president is alive![20] At about three o'clock this morning Central European Time, as he was being prepared for his funeral, President Christian opened his eyes. Those who were preparing him ran out of the room in fear.

The president was taken to a local hospital where he was given a thorough checkup by doctors of the highest caliber and was later released. When asked how he felt he said, and I quote, "I feel fine apart from a throbbing headache. I intend to find my murderer, and I intend to make every effort to find him and have him executed."

Uncle Henry gave a gulp and said "I think that we had better be going home and back into hiding." He then switched off the televison and went to turn on the engine of the boat whilst Auntie Freda cast off.

They were soon underway, and it wasn't long before they were back at the cove and safety.

Jimmy and Sam got off the boat and went outside of the cave to listen to some music on Jimmy's radio cassette recorder.

"I wish we could go back to the cottage" said Uncle Henry "for what little freedom I've got I may just as well be in jail"

"Never mind, Henry" said Auntie Freda lovingly "I'll make you a nice cup of tea, it'll make you feel better. I think it must be that guardian angel of yours that gave us this boat" she said.

"I think it must have been some kind of divine intervention" replied Uncle Henry.

"Uncle, uncle" shouted Jimmy as he ran into the cave. "I was listening to the radio when the news came on and fortunately I had a blank tape in the cassette player and was able to record it, listen" he said as he switched the tape on.

"After an investigation" said the news reader "President Christian has given up his search for his killer because he can find no records of anyone being arrested.

Great celebrations are to take place in all the major cities of the world to celebrate the resurrection of President Christian. Everyone is hailing him to be Christ who has at last returned to this planet."

"I don't know about him being Christ," said Auntie Freda "not after the way he went for our Jimmy. He may appear to be very nice on the surface but I just don't like the man, there's just something about him. I still think the good Lord must have set you free, Henry. I think it will be safe to go back to the cottage" she said.

"I think you're right there" Uncle Henry replied.

It was about two months later at breakfast that Uncle Henry said "does anyone mind if I hear the news?"

"Not at all, Henry" replied Auntie Freda.

Uncle Henry switched on the radio just in time to hear the news reader say "here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it. President Christian visited a children's home in Rome yesterday and healed a young boy who had been blind from birth. The president just went up to the young lad and placed his hands on him and said "be healed, my boy, receive your sight." With those words the boy immediately received his sight. The boy threw his arms around the president and said "thank you sir for giving me my sight, you must be Christ, just like everyone says."

The president replied "thank you, my boy, you are right, I am." The president is to hold a healing clinic in Jerusalem every Friday at 2.00 pm.

The president also stated today that all worship, from now on is to be directed to himself and anyone mentioning Jesus of Nazareth will be painfully executed.

No longer will a person swear an oath on the Bible in a court of law, but will instead swear allegiance to the president of The United Federal States of Europe and the one world government.

President Christian also stated that since he is Christ, and also God, he should receive the worship of his subjects. Father Wright is going to have a statue of the president made and put in the place where God should be worshipped and that is in the temple of God in Jerusalem. This statue will be given the very latest computer technology and will be able to speak. Television cameras will be focussed on the statue three times a day. Father Wright has decreed that when these broadcasts take place, everyone in the entire world must bow down and worship the image of President Christian. Anyone who refuses to do so will be painfully executed.[21]

The president has decided to move his palace to Jerusalem to supervise the construction of the statue, it is to be placed in the inner sanctuary. Israel has strongly objected to this, and has stated that the president has broken his covenant with them.[4] To which he replied "they will bow the knee to my statue or face the consequences." Some of the Jewish leaders refused to do so, and have been arrested and are to be executed.

The president also stated that he is going to phase out the Federal European Card with a new system which will be overseen by Father Wright. This system is to be called the DCLXVI which will prove to be a better system than the previous one.[22] Instead of the Federal European Card, an identification mark will be given to all persons over the age of eighteen years. We now hand you over to the president of the United Federal States of Europe, and also of the World."

"My dear European friends and not forgetting the rest of the world" the president began. "I intend to phase out the old Federal European Card Monetary System and replace it with a new one. The new system will be far better than the old, firstly because a card is so easily stolen or misplaced, and a monetary card can also be forged or fraudulently used.

Secondly it does seem a bit unfair to the rest of the world for us to go on using a card named after the United Federal States of Europe. The new system is to be known as the DCLXVI

System. This will consist of each person over the age of eighteen receiving an identification mark rather than having to carry around a card. There will be three types of identification marks and each person will be given a choice as to which one they receive. You may have a bar code, my name, or the name of the system tattooed, on your right hand or on your forehead. All three marks will be followed by your personal identification number and will involve having a small microchip implanted painlessly just under the skin. The tattoos are an added security measure because if the microchip and the tattoo don't match up, then a shopkeeper, or banker, or whoever it may be, will know straight away that someone has been tampering with the tattoo or microchip.

When the old Federal European Card Monetary System has been phased out, no-one will be able to buy, or sell, anything, anywhere, on the entire planet without this identification mark.[23] Special machines will be setup in banks, shops, etc., which will be able to read these marks, and if need be, they will even be able to tell the name and address of the customer. Special clinics and tattoo shops will be opened in all towns and cities for this purpose. Thank you for listening."

"Thank you Mr president," said James Johnson "and now for the rest of the news."

"I don't like the sound of that," said Auntie Freda.

"Neither do I," replied Uncle Henry "I'm certainly not going to bow my knee to any stupid statue, and I never liked the thought of having anything tattooed on my body. No way are we going to receive the mark of 'that' President Christian, or worship his statue!"

"I agree with you entirely," said Auntie Freda "but how are we going to live?" she asked.

"Well I am a market gardener and grow my own food, so I think that we had better store something up for a rainy day the best we can" said Uncle Henry.

"Jesus will look after us and feed us" said Jimmy.

"Thank you Jimmy for that encouragement " said Auntie Freda with a smile.

"That's all right, auntie" replied Jimmy.

After breakfast Uncle Henry set to work getting all sorts of things together, and loading them onto the train. There were boxes, planks, bits of wood, bags of compost, packets of seeds, lanterns, electric lights, and something that looked a bit like a wind up generator.

"What are you doing, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"I'm preparing for the worst" replied Uncle Henry.

"Would you and Sam help me take all this stuff to the boat?"

"Yes," replied Jimmy "but what do you mean?"

"Let's just say that I'm making sure that we can still manage to live without taking that stupid mark, of 'that' President Christian."

The boys helped Uncle Henry until almost dinner time.

"I think that it might be nice if we all had dinner on the boat" said Uncle Henry "then I can take you all out this afternoon."

"That shouldn't be a problem, dear" said Auntie Freda "I was going to prepare a cold meal anyway."

After dinner Uncle Henry asked Auntie Freda to cast off whilst he started the motor. To the surprise of all, instead of taking the boat out into the open sea Uncle Henry turned the boat around and headed it into the cave.

"Would you switch on the spotlight, please, Jimmy?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Sure," replied Jimmy "but where are we going?" he asked.

"I'm looking for a safe haven where we can hide and feed if necessary" replied Uncle Henry.

"But how are we going to live in the dark?" Sam asked looking rather puzzled.

"That's what the lights are for, Sam" replied Uncle Henry. "Some of them are the right colour to create artificial Sunlight so that I can grow vegetables, that is, if I can find somewhere to plant them."

They had been travelling for about forty minutes when Auntie Freda spotted on the right-hand

side of the boat an opening in the cave. "Let's try in there" she said.

Uncle Henry steered the boat into the opening, and as they turned in, they saw on their left that the opening led into a cavern.

"It's awfully dark in the cavern"said Sam.

"It won't be for long when I get the lights set up" Uncle Henry replied.

No sooner had Sam got the words out of his mouth when suddenly lights came on throughout the whole cavern.

After the initial shock, they looked around, and low and behold they found the cavern resembled the one at Smugglers' Cove. There were beautiful coloured lights lighting up the walls. There was also a small stream running through the cavern which cascaded over a small waterfall.

"Wow," said Sam "this is beautiful."

"Yes," said Uncle Henry "but best of all is the fact that there is plenty of fertile ground, and it looks like I don't need my lights after all. I think this will do very nicely, and there is even a place to hide the boat under the waterfall."

"There's a plug for the radio aerial over here" said Jimmy.

"That means that we can still be in contact with the outside world and remain hidden" said Uncle Henry. "I think I know where we are, I remember reading about it in the paper" he said. "We are in another part of Smugglers' Cove. It was meant to be open to the public but due to the nuclear war it didn't happen, it has probably been forgotten about by now. A London company was doing it up but they were destroyed in the war. There's only one problem, we only have light whilst Smugglers' Cove is open. All the lights are on the same circuit, so when the lights go out at Smugglers' Cove so will ours, so I think I'd better rig up those lights after all. Would you boys like to give us a hand?"

"Yes," said Jimmy "come on Sam."

"Ok, Jimmy" Sam replied.

After they had moored the boat Uncle Henry and the boys set to work. It took them about an hour the rig up all the lights.

"Uncle, what's this thing?" Jimmy asked pointing to a box with a large handle.

"That's an invention of my own" replied Uncle Henry "it's a wind up generator."

"How does it work?" Sam asked.

"You just need to turn the handle fast for a few minutes to put an electric charge into the battery" replied Uncle Henry.

"How long will it last before it needs a recharge, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"That depends on how fast and how long you turn the handle for," replied Uncle Henry "but I think you can get about thirty to forty-five minutes maximum charge. You can also use it for charging up car batteries and that's why I have brought so many.

Anyway, enough talking, I think that we had better get some vegetables planted."

Uncle Henry and the boys worked for another two hours or so before going back to the boat and returning to the cottage.

The next day early in the morning Sam came running into Jimmy's room. "There's a thunder storm coming and I'm frightened of the thunder!" he said.

"There's no need to be frightened" said Jimmy "Jesus will look after us."

As the storm drew nearer Jimmy said "have you noticed anything unusual about this storm"?

"No," Sam replied rather puzzled "apart from the fact that it's not raining again, what so unusual about the storm."

"Watch and listen" said Jimmy "the thunder is coming before the lightning."

"But that's not possible, Jimmy," Sam replied "light travels faster than sound and since they both happen at the same time the lightning has to reach us first."

"But it is!" Jimmy insisted "just watch and listen for a minute!"

Sam did as Jimmy suggested.

"Why, so it is!" he exclaimed "I don't like the sound of this at all, I'm frightened, Jimmy."

Just then Auntie Freda came into the room with a cup of hot chocolate for the boys.

"I heard you moving about" she said "so I thought I would bring you both a hot drink. What was that?" she asked.

"What was what?" Jimmy replied.

"I thought I heard someone say something about God's wrath being poured out upon the Earth" said Auntie Freda. "Still, I don't hear it now, perhaps I imagined it.[24]

Anyway would you boys like to come down for breakfast?"

"That would be nice" said Jimmy "we'll be down as soon as we're dressed."

At breakfast, Auntie Freda mentioned, that she thought she had heard someone say that the wrath of God was about to be poured out on the earth.

"That's funny," said Uncle Henry "I thought I heard the same thing just before the storm began."

"You mean I didn't imagine it?" replied Auntie Freda as a cold shiver went down her back.

"I thought I'd imagined it too" said Uncle Henry.

"The funny thing about this storm is that you can hear the thunder before the lightning flash" said Jimmy.

"Don't be silly, Jimmy," replied Uncle Henry "that can't possibly happen."

"I know that!" said Jimmy "but just watch and listen."

They all stopped talking and listened.

"You're right Jimmy" said Uncle Henry "the thunder is coming before the lightning."

The storm grew louder until it was overhead. By now the thunder was really loud. Sam ran to Auntie Freda and clung on to her tightly. Every time there was a clap of thunder he jumped and clung on to Auntie Freda even more tightly.

"I don't like this at all, Henry" said Auntie Freda trying not to show how frightened she really was. "The thunder and lightning are far worse than I've ever seen in my entire life" she said. "Lightning is striking the ground all around us, and it's very near to the cottage, and I've never seen the sky so dark at this time of day."

"I'm sure that everything is going to be all right" said Uncle Henry who was also afraid but was managing not to show it. Jimmy was the only one who wasn't afraid.

"Aren't you frightened, Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"What have I got to be frightened of?" Jimmy replied. "Jesus has everything under control, nothing is going harm us."

"What faith he has in Jesus" commented Uncle Henry "I wish I had a faith like that."

Just then there was a rumbling noise and the breakfast pots began to rattle, and it wasn't long before the whole building began to shake.

"It's an earthquake" Uncle Henry shouted with surprise.

"What shall we do Henry, do you think we should get out of the building as quickly as possible?" Auntie Freda asked.

"No" replied Uncle Henry "with the weather as bad as it is, we would probably be struck by lighting. Get under the table everyone as quickly as possible that's the safest place."

The ground had begun to really shake by now. Pots and pans began to fall off shelves and furniture began to fall over. Auntie Freda thought that at any moment the whole building would collapse. Gradually the earthquake subsided and the storm died down.

"I'm glad that's over, I've never known a storm like that I my entire life" said Uncle Henry.

"Neither have I, Henry" Auntie Freda replied.

"I'm going to put the news and weather forecast on" said Uncle Henry.

"This morning's storm and earthquake has created havoc throughout the country" said the news reader. "The country has almost been brought to a stand still with roads being so badly damaged that they are almost impassable making it difficult to travel very far at all. There are however, a few roads in the southeast that are still passable. Hundreds of buses have had to be cancelled because of road conditions and hardly any trains are running due to the track being so badly damaged. Also, because of damage to runways, there have been no flights in or out of any airport in England. In fact the only place in England and Wales that any planes have been able to take off and land is Cardiff.

Due to the earthquake which measured eight on the Richter Scale, electricity, gas, and water supplies have been cut off to many homes due to broken pipes and powerlines coming down. Thousands of homes throughout Europe are also without power. Powerlines and many power stations have been struck by lightning. The strangest thing about this storm was, that, the thunder appeared to come before the lightning. Another strange phenomenon is that just before the storms began, a number of people reported hearing voices saying something like the wrath of God is about to be poured out upon the earth. I'm not so sure about that myself, I didn't hear it!

Earthquakes and very bad storms have been reported throughout the entire world. There was an earthquake in New York at 4.00 am EST. We now go over live to our on the spot reporter Roger Thomas."

"There has been a massive earthquake here in New York which happened at about 4.00 am New York time" said Roger Thomas. "It is one of the biggest earthquakes since records began" he continued. "The Richter Scale wasn't able to record how big the quake was because all the needles went off the scale, however, the experts can only guess how big it was. There is hardly a building that has not either fallen down or been very badly damaged. The shockwaves have been felt as far west as Chicago, as far north as northern Canada and as far south as Texas."

"But aren't earthquakes relatively normal in America" asked the news reader.

"Yes," replied the reporter "but not on the Eastern Seaboard."

"Thank you, Roger Thomas" said the news reader.

"We have also just received news that there has also been an earthquake in Sydney, Australia, which scored seven on the Richter Scale. The earthquake took place at 6.00 pm in Sydney."

The news reader paused for a moment and then said "how strange there were three earthquakes New York 's earthquake was 4.00 am Eastern Standard Time, Britain's was 9.00 am GMT, Australia's was 6.00 pm in Sydney. When you work it out from the different time zones, all the earthquakes happened at the same time, how odd. Still they are not as bad as the ones we had a few months ago. Now they really did cause havoc."

Shortly after Uncle Henry had switched off the news, the phone rang "it's Old Joe," said Uncle Henry "he's inviting us all to dinner, would you like to go, Freda?"

"That's very nice of him" she said "that would be nice dear."

"And how about you boys?"

"You bet!" said Jimmy "that'll be smashing."

"Yea!" said Sam "I would like to go." But their faces soon dropped when Uncle Henry told them that Tommy would be there, not that they didn't like Tommy, it was just that at times, he could be a bit of a nuisance and get on their nerves.

"Come on," said Uncle Henry encouragingly "it won't be that bad."

"Ok" replied Jimmy with a smile.

When they arrived, Old Joe greeted them at the door with a smile "hello," he said "it's nice to see you all again, do come in, would you boys like a mint?"

"Oo, yes, please, we would, wouldn't we Jimmy"replied Sam as they went inside.

"You bet" said Jimmy "mints, are my favourites."

"They're mine too" said Sam.

"Tommy is out the back, and I'm sure that he will be pleased to see you boys. Only this morning Tommy was telling me, that you boys, are the best friends that he's got. He never stopped talking for ages about the fun he had when he came to stay with you."

Jimmy and Sam looked at each other but said nothing.

Just then the door bust open and in came Tommy. "Hello," he said "it's nice to see you, are you coming out to play? Grandad's bought me a wigwam. Would you like to see it, perhaps we could play Cowboys and Indians?"

With that Jimmy and Sam didn't hesitate.

"I'll be the Indian" said Tommy "and you two can be the Cowboys."

It wasn't long before the boys were all having a great time. Jimmy and Sam managed to capture Tommy twice, but he managed to escape when they were not looking. Tommy even managed to capture Sam, but Jimmy managed to rescue him. They were having such a great time, that the time seemed to pass so quickly, and it didn't seem very long before it was time for dinner.

"Dinner's ready boys" shouted Old Joe.

"We're coming grandad" said Tommy.

"Don't forget to wash your hands boys" said Old Joe.

"Watch this, I normally just turn on the tap and let it run, and grandad thinks I've washed my hands"said Tommy as he turned on the tap "it works every time."

"And don't just turn on the tap Tommy, to make me think that you've washed your hands, when really you've not" said Old Joe.

"Well it didn't work this time" commented Jimmy.

"I don't know what happened, it has always worked before?!" said Tommy looking rather puzzled.

"I do" said Uncle Henry as he entered the kitchen. "Grandad and I were talking about the things we used to get up to when we were young. I was telling him how I used to go into the bathroom to wash my hands and just turn the on tap to make out that I had washed my hands. So he thought that he'd better check up on you boys, sorry lads.

But you know, it really isn't such a good idea not to wash your hands before a meal, with all those germs you get on your hands whilst playing. You never know what you might be eating."

"Did your mum and dad ever find out?" Tommy asked.

"No," replied Uncle Henry "but I can remember being off school for about two weeks with a terrible stomach upset. I was really very seriously ill. It was touch and go as to whether I needed to go into hospital. After that, I always made sure that I washed my hands before eating a meal, I can tell you!"

"Wow!" said Tommy "I'm going to make sure that I wash my hands in the future."

"So am I" said Jimmy.

"Me too"said Sam as he picked up the soap before anyone else had chance to get it. "I'm going to make sure that my hands are really clean" he said.

"So am I," said Jimmy "that is if I get chance to get the soap."

"I want it first" said Tommy.

"Boys, boys, calm down and take your turn," said Uncle Henry "I never thought that I would see the day when you would be falling out over who gets the soap first."

"Your right there" laughed Old Joe as he came into the kitchen to get the meal. "I never thought that I would see Tommy so eager to wash his hands.

Anyway, when you boys have washed your hands, the meal is ready."

Soon they were all seated at the meal table and enjoying some of Old Joe's cooking.

"This is a lovely stew," said Auntie Freda "what is it?"

"It's a recipe that I made up when I was in the army" Old Joe replied.

"It really is delicious" said Uncle Henry.

After dinner the boys went out again to play while Old Joe, Uncle Henry, and Auntie Freda sat down for a chat with a nice hot cup of tea.

"Wasn't that a terrible storm we had this morning," said Old Joe "Tommy was scared half to death? The poor boy came into my room screaming with fear. I've never seen him in such state. I was pretty frightened myself. Then there was that terrible earthquake."

"We were pretty frightened as well," said Uncle Henry "I've never seen lightning like that. It just seemed to be striking the ground everywhere."

"And did you notice that there was a clap of thunder before you saw the lighting" Old Joe interrupted.

"Well I just don't know what this world is coming to" said Auntie Freda.

"Well it seemed like the end of the world this morning" said Old Joe. "I thought we were all goners for sure."

"I can believe you there, Joe" replied Uncle Henry.

As they talked the afternoon passed quickly, and soon it was time to go home. Old Joe went outside and called the boys. They were all having such a good time that they didn't want to come in.

"Do we have to go?" Jimmy ask glumly.

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "it's time we were getting home for tea. What do you say to Joe for inviting us to dinner?"

"Thank you for having us" said Jimmy politely.

"Yes, thank you"said Sam "it's been very nice."

"Uncle Henry, when can I come and stay at your house again?" Tommy asked.

"Tommy, don't be so cheeky!" said Old Joe.

"It's all right, Joe," replied Uncle Henry "I'm sure that we can sort something out in the near future, Tommy."

"Smashing!" Tommy replied.

"He did so enjoy himself the last time he stayed" said Old Joe. "Well, I'd better not keep you."

"Thank for having us, Joe" said Uncle Henry as he, Auntie Freda, and the boys got into the van.

Uncle Henry started the engine and they set off for home.

"I did enjoy playing Cowboys and Indians with Tommy" said Sam.

"So did I" said Jimmy "it was really fun."

That evening after tea, Jimmy and Sam decided play outside, but it wasn't long before they had to come in because it had started to hail.

"I hope that it's not as bad as the storm we had this morning"said Sam as they came inside.

"I don't think that anything could be as bad as that" said Auntie Freda. "Would you boys like a nice cup of hot chocolate?"

"Yes, please auntie" replied Jimmy.

"Please," said Sam. "Jimmy look out of the window, at the hail, just look at how fast it's coming down."

"It's a good thing that we came in when we did" said Jimmy

"Yes, and look, there is fire coming down with hail and it looks like it is mingled with blood"said Sam.[25]

"The strange thing is," said Uncle Henry as he looked out of the window "the fire is only burning up the trees and grass."

"I don't like the look of this hailstorm at all, Henry" said Auntie Freda. "I've never known anything like it in my life, what is happening to this world? First there was that terrible storm

this morning, and now this?"

"I don't know, Freda, I really don't know"said Uncle Henry.

"I'm frightened" said Sam as he ran over to Auntie Freda and threw himself into her arms.

"There is nothing to be afraid of" said Auntie Freda "it can't hurt us indoors."

"That's right" said Jimmy "Jesus will look after us."

"Are you sure?" Sam asked rather worriedly.

"Of course I am" said Jimmy with a smile "Jesus won't let anything hurt us."

Eventually the storm died down.

"I'm going to put the news on" Uncle Henry said as he switched on the radio.

"Here is the news, and this is James Johnson reading it" said the news reader.

"This evening a terrible hailstorm has swept this country. The strange thing is, the storm was not just local to England and Wales. It also effected every nation of the world. There is not a country that has escaped, and many people have been killed. The storm has created more havoc throughout the world, burning up one third of it's trees and grass. The worse part of the storm is the substance that fell with the hail which was something that looked like blood.

Now for the rest of the news. Father Wright has said that from midnight tonight the DCLXVI identification mark will come into being. This is the new monetary system, and everyone over the age of eighteen will be called in alphabetic order of surname to attend a tattoo shop or special clinic to receive the mark. The mark will be placed on the right hand or on the forehead. Anyone refusing to take the mark will not be able to buy or sell anything, anywhere, in the world, and therefore everyone will need this mark."

"It won't take very long to get around to our name, Freda" said Uncle Henry.

"It is a good thing that you're a market gardener," said Auntie Freda "or we'd starve."

"Well it's no good worrying about it" said Uncle Henry.

"I for one don't want to receive that stupid mark" said Auntie Freda. "I don't like the idea of being marked like cattle."

"Neither do I, Freda" said Uncle Henry "neither do I. Our name is Greene, so if they call everyone in alphabetical order it won't take very long for them to get to us."

"As you say, Henry, it's no good worrying about it" said Auntie Freda. "Still, things might look better in the morning."

A few days later, an official looking letter with a Jerusalem postmark arrived on the doormat.

"Whatever can it be?" said Auntie Freda.

"It's just as I feared," Uncle Henry replied as he opened up the envelope "it is our call up to receive the mark of 'that' President Christian."

"Well what does it say, Henry?" Auntie Freda asked.

"It says," Uncle Henry replied as he began to read,

"'Dear Mr Greene.

An appointment has been made you and your wife to attend the Tattoo Shop, 3 High Street, Oaktree Garden City on the 11th of this month at 3 pm to receive the new identification mark.

If you are unable to attend at this date or time please contact the registration office on the telephone number at the top of this letter.

Failure to receive the new identification mark will result in you not being able to buy or sell anything, anywhere in the entire world.

Yours faithfully, J Robinson JP'.

I don't like the sound of that, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"Neither do I, Freda," Uncle Henry replied "but it is no use worrying about it. It is just as well that I'm a market gardener."

It was just after breakfast the next day, that, Uncle Henry turned on the radio, for the news.

"Here is the news, and this is James Johnson reading it" said the announcer.

"An extinct volcano in the pacific basin exploded this morning. The explosion was so great that it set the mountain top on fire and threw it hundreds of metres into the air before it fell back into the sea.[26] It is reported that it created a tsunami 500 metres in height. We now take you over to our studio in San Francisco where Roger Thomas is speaking with an eye witness.

"Hello there, Roger."

"Hello, James" replied Roger.

"We believe that you have an eye witness as to last night's volcanic explosion?" James Johnson asked.

"That's right" replied Roger Thomas "I have with me in the studio, Sam Johnson who is a pilot with the US Air Force."

"That's my name!" said Sam.

"Shush, Sam, were trying to listen" said Jimmy.

"Sorry" replied Sam rather sheepishly.

"So what happened, Mr Johnson?" Roger Thomas asked.

"Well, I was flying over the area when there was a loud explosion and in less than a second something whizzed passed my aircraft, causing so much turbulence that it almost threw me out of the sky. I managed to regain control of the aircraft just in time to see the top of the mountain hit the sea. It caused the biggest tsunami I've ever seen. When that thing hits land, it is going to cause an awful lot of destruction. The strange thing is that when the mountain top hit the sea, it seemed to turn it blood red. Whatever it was, it must have poisoned the water."

"I'm afraid that I will have to stop you there, as we've run out of time" interrupted Roger Thomas. "Thank you Mr Johnson, we now hand you back to the studio."

"Thank you, Roger" said James Johnson.

"We have just heard that hundreds of ships have been sunk and hundreds of lives have been lost because of the tsunami, and many more lives are expected to be lost. In spite of the fact that when the tsunami reaches this country, it will have dissipated, it will still be serious enough to cause severe damage to ships and small boats. It is recommended, if you do have a small boat to get it in safety within the next few hours, before the tsunami hits. The wave was of such magnitude that it will not have dissipated by the time it reaches us. We have also heard that when the mountain top hit the water it did in fact poison it, killing much of the marine life, but it is not yet clear how many creatures have died."

"I think that we had better get the boat to safety" said Uncle Henry.

After the boys had helped Auntie Freda with the washing up they all set off for the boat, and it wasn't long before they were all on board.

"Where are we going?" Auntie Freda asked.

"We are going into the cave to our hideout to get the boat in safety" replied Uncle Henry.

About two days later at five o'clock in the morning Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda were awakened by a loud banging on the front door of the cottage. Uncle Henry wearily got out of bed and went to answer the door. On opening it, he found Old Joe standing there looking as white as a sheet. Uncle Henry thought that he looked like he was about to collapse. He hurriedly got him inside and asked Auntie Freda if she could get some brandy.

"Joe, whatever is the matter?!" Uncle Henry asked.

"It's the end of the World! it's the end of the World!" shouted Old Joe hysterically "it's the end of the World I tell you! it's the end of the World!"

Uncle Henry gave Old Joe a sharp slap across the face to bring him to his senses. "Here, drink this, it seems that you had a very nasty shock" said Uncle Henry.

"What is it?" Old Joe asked still shaking with fear.

"It's brandy, it will make you feel better" replied Uncle Henry.

"Thank you," said Old Joe "you're right," he said as he drank the brandy "I have had a nasty shock. I had a telephone call yesterday from Professor Wormwood."

"You know Professor Wormwood! the most famous astronomer there is?!" Uncle Henry interrupted in astonishment. "I've known him since I was knee high to a grasshopper" said Old Joe "we went to the same school together.

Anyway, to get back to the story, Professor Wormwood phoned me up yesterday, knowing that I am a good mathematician and being an old friend, he asked me if he sent an E-mail, would I give him a second opinion on some figures? When it arrived this morning it showed what he believed to be the correct projection of the comet named after himself, Comet Wormwood.[27] He had not originally taken into account that the comet will pass close to the planet Jupiter, and its course will be altered. I checked his findings, and they were correct. That thing up there in the sky is heading straight for the Earth! It's the end of the World I tell you, it's the end of the World!!"

"Now calm down, just calm down" said Uncle Henry. "Are you sure there is no mistake?" he asked, feeling rather alarmed but trying not to show it.

"Yes," replied Old Joe "we both checked and double checked. There is no doubt about it Comet Wormwood is heading straight for us."

"Let's see if there is anything about it on the early morning news" said Uncle Henry as he switched on the radio.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the announcer. "We have just heard that there is a comet heading straight for the Earth. It has been named after its discoverer Professor Charles Wormwood. In fact we have Professor Wormwood with us in our Edinburgh studio. Professor, what can you tell us about the comet?"

"Well James," said the professor "it was about four days ago when I was working at the observatory that I noticed a small object in the sky. I checked it again a day later and saw that it was a comet travelling at a colossal rate of speed. At first I thought that it would miss the Earth, but I had forgotten about the planet Jupiter which will deflect the course of the comet. When I rechecked my calculations, I found that the comet is heading straight for the Earth. That thing is travelling at a tremendous speed. It is travelling faster than anything I have ever seen in the universe. If it keeps up its present course and speed, it should be with us by noon the day after tomorrow."

"So, professor, what does this mean," James asked feeling very worried, although he didn't show it "does it mean the end of the World?"

"Not necessarily, James," replied the professor "the comet although travelling at a colossal speed is coming into the Earth's orbit from behind and will be chasing the Earth. It will also strike the Earth on the side facing away from the Sun, and will strike at a very low angle, that is, almost parallel to the horizon."

"So what does this mean, Professor?" James asked.

"Well," said the professor "to put it into laymen's terms, it means that because of the angle

the comet is coming in at it will lessen the impact."

"And how will the angle affect the impact?" James asked feeling a little more relieved.

"Because of the low angle and the fact that the comet has to chase the Earth and will strike on the side that is turned away from the Sun, the Earth will be rotating away from, and moving away from the comet, and the impact will be lessened" replied the professor. "If you take the orbital speed and the rotational speed of the earth from the speed of the comet, you will see that the impact will be lessened."

"So will the Earth be destroyed at noon the day after tomorrow?" James asked.

"It may survive, James," replied the professor "but I just don't know, we will just have to wait and see."

"Thank you Professor Wormwood" said James Johnson.

"Thank you James" replied the professor.

"We have President Christian in our studio in Jerusalem" said James Johnson. "We now hand you over live to the president of the UFSE and the World."

"My dear European friends," said the president "and of course the rest of the World. I'm sure that many of you have by now heard the terrifying news that a comet is heading straight for Earth. I want to put your minds at ease, because I have rockets fitted with nuclear warheads that are not only able to get into space, but will be able to destroy the comet before it gets anywhere near to Earth. The rockets will be launched within the next hour. So be at peace my friends, there is nothing to fear. Within the next few hours the comet will be destroyed and the Earth will be safe. Thank you for listening."

"Well" said Auntie Freda "I never thought that President Christian could ever do any good."

"Neither did I" replied Uncle Henry.

"We have received news that President Christian has within the last few minutes had three rockets armed with nuclear warheads fired at the incoming comet" continued the radio announcer. "It has been calculated that at the speed of the incoming comet and the speed of the rockets they should reach their target at about noon tomorrow."

"It looks like the world has been saved after all" said Uncle Henry cheerfully. "I'm not so sure" replied Old Joe "I've got a strange feeling about it all."

"Come on, Joe" said Uncle Henry "those rockets are powerful enough to blow up that comet, and you know it, what can possibly go wrong?"

"Perhaps you're right, Henry," replied Old Joe "perhaps I'm just being a silly old man."

"I wouldn't say that, Joe," said Uncle Henry "you're bound to be a little worried, especially after talking to Professor Wormwood. I must admit, when you first told me about it, I too was a little worried, but I'm sure that those missiles, or rockets, or whatever they are, will destroy that comet once and for all."

"Perhaps you're right, Henry," repeated Old Joe.

"You know I'm right," said Uncle Henry "now how about a nice cup of tea?"

"That would be nice, please, Henry!" replied Old Joe.

Just then, Jimmy came down the stairs.

"Whatever is all the noise about?" he asked.

"There's a comet on a collision course with the Earth," replied Uncle Henry "but everything is going to be all right. President Christian has launched three nuclear missiles at it."

"Of course it is," Jimmy replied "Jesus wouldn't let anything destroy this planet."

"I admire his faith," said Old Joe "but one day it is going to get him in trouble."

"I don't think so, he's only a boy" laughed Uncle Henry.

Jimmy smiled but said nothing, he knew that he was safe in the Lord's hands.

It was about noon the next day when Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, Jimmy, Sam, and Old Joe, who they had invited to dinner, gathered around the television.

"We bring you a special programme about the Comet Wormwood, introduced by James Johnson" said the announcer.

"We have in our studio today, the technician, Joe Sampson who designed the rockets that have been sent to destroy Comet Wormwood" said James Johnson. "We are also keeping an eye on the comet by using the Wormwood Space Telescope, and we should be able to see the comet being destroyed. So what is so special about these rockets, Joe?" asked James Johnson.

"Well, they have nuclear warheads that would be able to destroy an entire planet let alone a comet," replied Joe Sampson "a comet is only small fry compared to a planet."

"How big a planet could all three rockets destroy?" James Johnson asked.

"One rocket alone could blow up a planet 50,000 miles in diameter" Joe replied. "That means that the three rockets combined have more than enough explosive power to destroy the largest planet, Jupiter which has a diameter of roughly 88,703 miles."

"I'm sorry, but I will have to stop you there," interrupted James Johnson "we have heard that the rockets are approaching the comet."

As they all watched with interest, they saw two of the rockets veer off course for no apparent reason, and only one of them struck home and hit the comet.

"The rocket has had no effect!" said James Johnson in amazement "I repeat, ladies and gentlemen the rocket has had no effect! The comet has not been damaged at all and it is still heading for the earth!"

"What do you make of that?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I don't know," said Jimmy "but I do know that Jesus won't let this world be destroyed by a comet."

"We have Professor Wormwood on the phone" continued James Johnson. "Professor, I understand that you have been watching the events with interest, what do you make of it? Do you think that this comet could spell the end of all mankind?"

"Well, James," replied the professor "I don't think that it is the end for us. There is still time to get some more rockets up there to destroy the comet."

"But if we find that we can't destroy it, what chance do we have?" James Johnson asked rather worriedly.

"There is still time to destroy the comet before it gets near the Earth" replied the professor. "But if we fail to do so, that doesn't necessarily mean that it is the end of the world. After all, it may just miss the Earth, altogether."

"But I thought that according to your calculations the comet would definitely hit the Earth" said James Johnson.

"That's right," replied the professor "it most certainly is on a collision course with the Earth, but just how close it will get I'm not sure. You see, because it is coming in at such a low angle there is the possibility that it may slingshot around the Earth and carry on its journey without causing too much damage, but if it does hit, then we're in big trouble."

"Why is it that you can't predict whether the comet will hit the earth or not?" James Johnson asked enquiringly.

"It is because of the very low angle that the comet is approaching, it doesn't leave much of a margin for error" replied the professor.

"So, what sort of a margin are we looking at, professor?" James Johnson enquired.

"If the comet misses us, it will only be by a margin of about a few thousand feet. That means that it will only miss the highest mountains by a few feet."

"It's as close as that?"commented James Johnson.

"Thank you Professor Wormwood. I'm afraid that I will have to stop you there, President Christian is about speak to us live from the Royal Palace in Jerusalem."

"My dear European friends, and of course the rest of the world" said the president. "No doubt you have all been worried about the comet that is fast approaching us. Do not fear I have everything under control. Within the next five minutes I am sending up to meet the comet three of the most powerful rockets with the most explosive force that the world has ever known. These will be followed thirty minutes later by a rocket fitted with the world's most powerful nuclear bomb that has ever been invented."

At that moment there was a knock at the door.

"I'll go"said Sam "when he opened the door he nearly fell over backwards in astonishment, there standing at the door was Professor Wormwood."

"Is Joe Smart here?" he enquired politely.

"Who is it, Sam?" Auntie Freda called from inside the cottage.

"It, it, it's," stammered Sam.

"Who is it?" Auntie Freda enquired once again.

"It, it, it's" Sam repeated trying to get the words out but not quite managing it. Eventually Auntie Freda came to the door.

"Is Joe Smart here?" the professor asked once again.

"Yes," said Auntie Freda "who shall I say would like to speak to him?"

"Oh, auntie!" said Sam in disgust who by now had managed to speak "don't you know who this is?! it's Professor Wormwood!"

"Is it?!" said Auntie Freda "I'm sorry professor, I didn't recognise you, would you like to come in?"

"Thank you" said the professor.

"Well, hello there, Charles" said Old Joe "it's nice to see you again. You got my message then?"

"Yes, fine thanks" said the professor "Tom phoned me too and told me that you were here."

"You've not met my friends," said Old Joe "this is Henry Greene and his wife Freda, and his nephew, young Jimmy, and this is Jimmy's best friend Sam."

"I'm pleased to meet you all" said the professor shaking each of them all by the hand in turn.

"I don't think that Jimmy and Sam will ever want to wash their hands again," commented Auntie Freda "they've never met anyone famous before."

"Would you boys like a mint?" the professor asked kindly.

"Oo, yes, please" said Jimmy.

"Smashing," said Sam "thank you."

"How did you manage to get here so quick," Jimmy asked politely "you were on the television, not more then five minutes ago?"

The professor laughed "if you remember," he said "I was talking on the telephone."

"But you must have run, to get here so quickly from the phone?" replied Jimmy.

The professor laughed again. "No, no" he said "I was talking to James Johnson in my car, on my mobile, and believe it or not, I was parked just outside your front door."

"Do sit down and make yourself at home, professor," said Auntie Freda "would you like a nice cup of tea?" she asked.

"That would be lovely" the professor replied "I've just driven down from Edinburgh."

"But you don't sound Scottish?" commented Sam.

"That right, son, I was born and bred in London" replied the professor. "In fact I went to the same school as Joe, we're old school pals."

"Professor, do you think that the comet will hit the Earth and kill us all?" Sam asked looking worried.

"No, I don't think that, for one minute, son," the professor replied kindly. "I believe that it will miss the Earth but only just."

"Do you take milk and sugar in your tea, professor?" Auntie Freda asked.

"Yes, please, milk and two sugars," replied the professor "but please feel free to call me Charles" he added.

"The professor has come down to stay with me for a few days" said Old Joe.

"Can the professor stay for dinner?" Jimmy asked looking longingly at his auntie with his deep blue eyes.

"I do wish you wouldn't do that, you know I find it hard to say no when you do" replied Auntie Freda.

"I hadn't intended on staying" said the professor. "I brought some lunch with me and was going to go for a walk and have a picnic."

"Please be our guest for lunch" said Uncle Henry.

After dinner they decided to go for a walk it the countryside.

"It's a beautiful sunny day" said Uncle Henry.

"It certainly is" the professor replied. "You know, I was studying the Sun at the Wormwood Space Observatory in Edinburgh until this business of the comet came about."

"After tomorrow I wonder if we'll ever see it again?" Uncle Henry thought to himself.

"But I thought that it was very dangerous to look at the Sun through a telescope?"said Jimmy.

"It is," replied the professor "you must never, ever, look directly at the Sun through any telescope. You could blind yourself for life if you do, but the modern telescopes that we use at the Wormwood Space Observatory are safe to do so. You see, they use television cameras, so we never look directly at the Sun. These cameras are fitted with special filters that blot out a lot of the Sun's light.

I'll tell you what, Jimmy, if you would all like to come up to Edinburgh I'll show you around the observatory."

Jimmy's eyes lit up "can we go, please, uncle?" he asked longingly.

"I'll think about it," Uncle Henry replied "but I'm making no promises."

"I do hope that we can go" Jimmy thought to himself.

As they finished their walk Uncle Henry said "would you and Joe both like to stay for tea, professor? It's not every day that we get someone famous like yourself, pay us a visit."

"That is very kind of you, Henry," the professor replied "but are you sure that you have enough food?"

"I'm sure that we have" Uncle Henry replied.

After tea they all gathered around the television to find out more about the comet that was on collision course with Earth.

Uncle Henry switched on just in time to hear James Johnson say "the rockets have failed to destroy Comet Wormwood. The next and most powerful of all the rockets should strike in less than five minutes."

"It's proving a bit of a tough comet to blow up" commented Professor Wormwood.

"The last and most powerful rocket is now approaching the comet" said James Johnson.

As they all watched, they saw, the rocket strike the comet, as it did so there was an enormous cloud of dust thrown out from it. "It's been destroyed" said James Johnson with relief. "The comet has been destroyed."

But when the cloud of dust had dissipated, to their horror, they found that the comet was still intact. James Johnson gasped. "The comet is still in one piece! I repeat, Comet Wormwood is still in one piece! and is still on collision course with the Earth" he said in horror.

Just then the professor's mobile phone rang. It was the television station phoning him up.

"Would you mind turning the volume on the television down a bit please, otherwise we will get a feed back from it?" the professor asked politely.

"We now have Professor Wormwood on the telephone" said James Johnson. "Professor, the comet has not been destroyed, what hope is there for the world now."

"As I said before, there is still hope" replied the professor. "Because of the very low angle that the comet is coming in at, it may miss the Earth completely. If it does hit, the Earth could survive, but I couldn't hazard a guess as too how much damage there will be."

"But couldn't we send up more rockets to blow up the thing?" James Johnson asked. "I'm afraid that there isn't anymore time to do so" said Professor Wormwood.

"Do you mean that there is nothing more that can be done?" enquired James Johnson.

"I'm afraid to say it, but that's right" the professor replied. "Even if we did manage to get some more rockets up, the comet will be too close to the Earth when they reach it."

"So what does that mean?" James Johnson asked.

"Well, what it basically means is, the comet will be too close to the Earth to explode the missiles" replied the professor. "If you do, not only are you likely to destroy the comet, but you would also destroy the Earth along with it."

"So what you are saying is, there is now no hope for us?" said James Johnson.

"No, I'm not saying that at all" replied the professor. "As I said a few moments ago, the comet could miss the Earth, and if it does hit, the impact will be lessened and the Earth may survive."

"Thank you, Professor Wormwood" said James Johnson.

After the interview had finished, Sam walked over to the professor. "Do you think that we will survive?!" he asked worriedly.

"Of course I do, Sam" replied the professor. "These is only a very slim chance that my calculations are even slightly wrong. That comet will miss the earth, you'll see" he said assuredly with a smile.

"I think it's time that we should be going" said Old Joe "thank you for having us."

"Yes, thank you for your hospitality" said the professor as he got up to leave "it's been nice meeting you all."

"You're very welcome" replied Uncle Henry "please feel free to call and see us again during your stay."

"I might just do that" replied the professor.

"I never knew that Professor Wormwood was such a nice person" said Auntie Freda after Old Joe and the professor had left.

"I must admit, I didn't expect him to be so down to earth"said Uncle Henry.

"He certainly put our minds at ease regarding that comet that is heading straight for us," said Auntie Freda "anyway, how about I make us all a nice hot drink?"

"That would be nice, auntie" said Jimmy. "Can me and Sam have a nice drink of chocolate?"

"Why choc-o-late, why not choc-o-early?" said Uncle Henry.

"Ha, ha, very funny" said Jimmy with a smile.

"I thought that it was funny" said Sam laughingly.

"Why don't we have a few board games?" suggested Uncle Henry.

"Cos, I don't want to be bored" replied Jimmy. "Do you get it, board games, being bored, get it?"

"I get it" said Uncle Henry with a laugh "you got your own back on me there. Anyway, shall we have a few board games?"

"That sounds a good idea"replied Auntie Freda. They played until it was time for bed.

It was midday the next day when Uncle Henry switched on the radio to find out the news of the comet.

"The world is safe" said the announcer "Comet Wormwood has landed. As the comet entered the Earth's atmosphere it began turning to powder and started leaving a thick trail of dust behind it. It then broke in to three pieces. The first piece hit the Rocky Mountains, the second hit the Alps, and the third hit the Himalayas. It has been estimated that the dust from the comet has covered about one third of the Earth's surface."

"Err," said Auntie Freda as she came in from the kitchen "just look at the water that has come out of the tap" she said holding up a jug of horrible looking greenish black sludge.

"I think we will have to get our water from the boat," said Uncle Henry "at least it's got a water filtration system."

Just then there was a knock at the door. When Auntie Freda answered it, she found Professor Wormwood standing there.

"I thought that I would pay you a visit" he said.

"Do come on in" said Auntie Freda with a smile "at least I recognised you this time."

"That's right" the professor said with a laugh.

"It's nice to see you again, Charles" said Uncle Henry.

"I was out for a drive and was passing the farm so I thought that I would see if you were at home" said the professor.

"You're very welcome" said Uncle Henry. "I was thinking of taking a trip on the boat this afternoon, would you like to join us?"

"I would be delighted" replied the professor.

"You didn't mention it to us, dear" said Auntie Freda.

"No, I didn't get chance before the professor arrived" replied Uncle Henry.

Soon it was time to go, and they all boarded the train and set off for the boat.

"What a quaint little train," said the professor "did you build it yourself?"

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "I did, it took me about two years."

"Well you certainly made a good job of it" said the professor.

"Thank you" replied Uncle Henry.

It wasn't long before they were on their way down the cliff and boarding the boat.

"My, what a beautiful boat" commented the professor.

"I won it in a crossword competition" said Auntie Freda.

"Really!" said the professor "well, you certainly did well to win this luxury boat."

Auntie Freda cast off as usual and Uncle Henry drove the boat out onto the open sea.

"What a beautiful day" commented the professor. "Yes, we certainly picked a nice day for a boat trip" said Uncle Henry. "Have you heard the news about the comet?"

"No, I haven't" replied the professor.

"If I can just drop anchor for a moment," said Uncle Henry "I'll see if I can get the news for you."

"Here is the news, and this is James Johnson reading it" said the announcer as Uncle Henry switched on the radio.

"Comet Wormwood broke into three pieces as it entered the Earth's atmosphere today, and hit the three of the highest mountain ranges in the world, as it did so, it knocked the tops off many of the mountains. It has been reported that the trail of dust from Comet Wormwood has landed on about a third of the Earth's oceans, lakes, rivers and reservoirs.[27] Many people have been taken to hospital very seriously ill and many have died through drinking the water."

"I'm sorry to hear that," commented the professor "but it could have been far worse, at least the Earth is still here."

"Do you think that those rockets could have weakened the comet, and that's why it broke up like it did?" Jimmy asked.

"It's possible, I suppose," replied the professor "but I just don't know."

"What's happened to the Sun?" Sam asked rather worriedly as he looked up into the sky "there is a bit missing."

"It's probably an eclipse" replied Uncle Henry.

"I don't think so, Henry, there isn't one due" replied the professor.

"What do you think the cause is, professor?" Jimmy asked.

"I don't know," replied the professor "but I don't like the look of it."

"I think that we had better get back to the safety of the cove" said Uncle Henry as he raised the anchor.

It didn't take long, and soon Uncle Henry was tying up the boat.

"I think we'd better stay on the boat where we can be sure of clean drinking water to make sure that we don't get poisoned from the left overs of that comet" said Uncle Henry.

"I think you're right there, Henry," Auntie Freda replied.

"Would you like to stay for tea, Charles?"Uncle Henry asked.

"Thank you for your kind offer, Henry," replied the professor "but I am afraid that on this occasion I will have to decline. I really must get the next flight back to my observatory in Edinburgh. Part of the Sun suddenly losing its light needs a thorough investigation."

Later that evening as she stepped off the boat for some fresh air, Auntie Freda said "I thought that it was a full moon tonight." "That's right, it is" replied Uncle Henry from inside the boat. "Then what has happened to the Moon" Auntie Freda asked "there is a bit missing, just like the Sun? Uncle Henry stepped outside to see for himself.

"Why, so there is!" he said.

"I'm frightened" said Sam.

"I'm sure that everything is going to be all right, Sam" said Auntie Freda assuredly, trying not to show that she too was frightened.

"Let's see if there is anything on the news" said Uncle Henry switching on the radio, but all he could get was crackling. "Whatever is the matter with this thing" he said.

"Oh uncle, you've forgotten to plug the aerial wire in"said Jimmy laughing.

"Oh, yes, so I have!" said Uncle Henry with a laugh.

After plugging it in he said "now let's try again." This time the radio worked.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the news reader. "Today in all parts of the world there has been wide spread panic because for the first time in the Earth's history, part of the Sun has without warning has suddenly gone dark. To add to the distress the

same thing has also happened to the Moon. We have Professor Wormwood on the telephone. Professor, just what has caused this strange phenomena, and just how much of the Sun and Moon would you say has grown dark?" James Johnson asked.

"I will have to say that I'm not really sure" the professor replied "but I would guess about one third.

I've been away for a few days holiday and I'm on my way back to the observatory in Edinburgh. I'm afraid that I won't be able to give you any real answers to your questions until tomorrow at the earliest. If you give me a call then, I may have more information for you."

"Thank you" Professor Wormwood.

"Thank you"replied the professor "I'm sorry I could not have been of more help to you."

"It's time you boys were getting ready for bed" said Auntie Freda.

"Ah" said Jimmy "can't we finish our game?"

"No, it's time for bed," she said "if you get ready now, I'll make you a nice cup of hot chocolate to drink in bed."

"Okay, auntie" said Jimmy politely.

As Uncle Henry took the boys their drinks Sam asked rather worriedly "uncle, why do you think that parts of the Sun, and Moon have gone dark?"

"I don't know, Sam," replied Uncle Henry "but whatever it is, I'm sure that it is nothing to worry about."

"Don't worry, Sam" said Jimmy "Jesus will look after us."

"Are you sure, Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"Of course I am," said Jimmy assuredly "Jesus has everything under His control."

The next day Uncle Henry again turned on the radio for the early morning news.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the announcer. "Yesterday there was a sudden darkening of parts the Sun, and Moon.

We now have Professor Wormwood on the phone speaking to us from the Wormwood Space Observatory in Edinburgh. Professor, when we spoke to you yesterday you were not able to give us much information. Do you have any more news than you had yesterday?"

"Yes we certainly do" replied the professor. "Both I, and my colleagues have been working through the night to solve the problem. We have not yet discovered the reason for the sudden darkening of the Sun and Moon, but we do know that the percentage of the dark parts of the Sun and Moon is exactly 33.3% to the first decimal place. That is exactly a third part of the Sun and of the Moon have grown darker without any apparent reason. Incidentally one third of the stars have also darkened."

"I'm sorry to have to stop you there, professor, but we have just received some very important news" interrupted James Johnson. "We have just learned that Sunset has occurred in Australia four hours earlier than it should have done. We now go over live, to our on the spot reporter, Roger Thomas. Roger, what is this news about the Sunset occurring early?"

"It was about an hour and a half ago that the sky began to grow dark" said Roger Thomas. "Everyone at first thought that it was a very bad storm coming, but to the horror of everyone, we saw the Sun go down four hours earlier than it should have done."

"Roger, we have Professor Wormwood on the line at the Wormwood Space Observatory, I wonder if he can shed some light on the matter, that wasn't meant to be a pun" said James Johnson. "We're sorry about the sound quality on that report, our technicians tell us they've been having trouble tracking the satellite.

Before we go over to Professor Wormwood we've received more astounding news that the

satellite navigation system has failed to work for the first time in its history. Many people have been lost at sea due to totally relying on it. Search and rescue have been sent out to hundreds of Mayday calls.

There have been many complaints from subscribers to satellite television. Apparently for some strange reason they are no longer able to receive it.

We can now go back to the professor, perhaps he can shed some light as to what is going on. So, professor, you heard the news, what do you make of it."

"Well, James," replied the professor "we did notice the stars suddenly increase their speed last night, so it comes as no surprise to us."

"So in laymen's terms what does that mean?" James Johnson asked.

"Basically what it means is that for some reason, and we have yet to find out why, the Earth's rotational speed has also increased" replied the professor.

"About how much would you say the increase is?" James Johnson asked.

"According to our calculations I would say that the Earth has increased its rotation speed by about one half its original speed" replied the professor. "For example if you were standing on the equator, instead of the normal speed of 1,000 miles per hour, you will now be travelling at a speed of approximately 1,500 miles per hour."

"If the speed of the Earth's rotation increased last night, then how is it the Sun rose at approximately the correct time this morning?"James Johnson enquired.

"There is a simple explanation for that," replied the professor "you see, the speed of the Earth increased just before dawn, our time."

"So what does that mean, professor?" James Johnson asked worriedly.

"It means that we are in for shorter days in the future" the professor replied.

"How much shorter will they be?" James Johnson asked.

"The days from now on will be about one third shorter than they were before, that is as much as eight hours" replied the professor.[28] "This means that from now on instead of the normal 24-hour day, we will be having a 16-hour day."

"So what will this mean to us all in the future?" James Johnson asked.

"Well, James," the professor replied "we have been working out a few statistics regarding the 16-hour day, would you like to hear them? From now on there will be approximately 10 ½ days a week. Months such as April, June, September, and November which usually have 30 days will now have 45. February will now have 42 days and 43 ½ every leap year. The remainder that normally have 31 days, will now have 46 ½. This also means that we will now have 547 $^{7}/_{8}$ days a year instead of 365 days and 549 days every leap year instead of 366."

"Does this mean that we will have to rewrite the calendar?!" James Johnson asked.

"Yes, I suppose it will" replied the professor.

"With the changes to the number of days per year, will this mean that there will be any change in the length of the seasons" enquired James Johnson.

"Not at all, James," replied the professor "it's the Earth's rotation speed that has increased, not its orbital speed."

"So in laymen's terms what does that mean?" James Johnson asked.

"What it basically means is, that although the days from now on will be shorter, the seasons and the years will still remain the same length. There will still be the same number of hours per year, that is approximately 8766."

"Is there any chance that the impact of the comet is to blame?" James Johnson asked.

"Not a chance," replied the professor "the change in the Earth's speed happened almost 19

hours after the comet hit."

"But what about the gravitational pull from the comet, couldn't that have had an effect on the Earth, and caused the increase in speed?" James Johnson asked.

"Not at all, James," replied the professor "as I said a moment ago, the increase in the Earth's speed happened almost 19 hours after the comet struck. Also the fragments from the comet were so small, and only measured a few feet across when they hit the mountains. This means that the gravitational pull would have been very minimal."

"But surely professor, the fragments of the comet must have been quite large to do so much damage to the mountain tops?" said James Johnson.

"The fragments were a lot smaller than they were originally thought to be, so the damage to the mountains was not as severe as was first thought" replied the professor. "Incidently the reason that the satellite navigation system has failed to work is because of the increase in the Earth's rotational speed. This is also the reason why the subscribers to satellite television can no longer receive it.

"So what does this mean, professor?" James Johnson asked.

"In layman's terms, what it mean is, because the Earth is now rotating faster, it is turning faster than the satellites are orbiting. This means that the geostationary satellites are no longer geostationary, but they are now tracking across the sky from east to west just as the Sun does each day" said Professor Wormwood.

"I see," said James Johnson "but how can this be corrected?"

"The only way I know of is to send up a spacecraft and reposition the satellites into a lower orbit" said the professor. "This would mean that they will have to travel faster to stay in orbit and will once again be geostationary."

"I would like to add at this point, that, because the Earth's rotation speed has increased this will alter the pull of the Moon on the tides. We may find that the tides may come in a lot faster in some parts of the country and indeed many parts of the world, and it will be a lot easier to get cut off by the tide."

"Thank you Professor Wormwood" said James Johnson.

"We have President Christian in our studio in Jerusalem."

"Mr President, you've heard all the terrifying news, what do you make of it?"

"There is no need for anyone to worry about anything" replied the president. "So what if the Earth is rotating faster than it used too, I have everything under control. Of course there may be some problems now, but I am sure that they can be ironed out. I intend to draft up a new calendar to sort out the problem. Of course, you can't have a 10 ½ day week. Neither can you have a month like February with 43 ½ days, was it?"

"Yes, that's right" replied James Johnson.

"No-one need be afraid" said President Christian "I'm still in control. Remember, I sorted out the problem with Comet Wormwood. The rockets I sent up weakened it enough for it to disintegrate when it hit the Earth's atmosphere. No doubt, it was the fragments which hit the Earth which caused it to rotate faster. I'm sure that these shorter days are only a minor hiccup.

With regards to the geostationary satellites that's no problem. I'll just simply send up a space shuttle and have them make all the necessary corrections."

"Thank you, Mr President" said James Johnson.

It was about two weeks later, after breakfast that Uncle Henry said "are you boys ready, it's time to go?"

"Time to go!" replied Jimmy looking rather puzzled "why, where are we going?!"

"Ah, now that would be telling" replied Uncle Henry with a big smile that went from ear to ear.

"I wonder where we're going, Sam?" said Jimmy.

"I don't know, Jimmy, but I did catch Auntie Freda packing a few things this morning" Sam replied. "When I asked her what she was doing she wouldn't tell me."

"We must be going away for a few days then," said Jimmy happily "I like holidays."

"Are you ready then boys?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Yes," Jimmy replied "can I just go and get my camera?"

"Ok" said Uncle Henry "but don't be long."

"Ok, I won't be" Jimmy replied.

"Would you mind getting mine as well, please, Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"Of course I will" said Jimmy.

It didn't take him long and he soon arrived with both of their cameras.

"Time to go" said Uncle Henry.

As they were getting into the van Jimmy asked "auntie, where is it that we are going?"

"That's a secret" replied Auntie Freda "you'll find out soon enough."

As they arrived at Oaktree Garden City Airport, Uncle Henry asked "have you guessed where we're going, Jimmy?"

"We're going to Edinburgh to see Professor Wormwood" Jimmy replied with a big smile.

"That's right," said Uncle Henry "the Professor invited us just before he left. He did say that he might be busy for a while but we were welcome to go and stay with him for a few days."

"I'm excited!" said Sam.

"So am I!" said Jimmy "I've never been on a plane before."

"Neither have I!" said Sam.

As they waited in the departure lounge, Uncle Henry asked "would anyone like something to drink."

"I'd like a lemonade, please uncle?" said Jimmy

"Can I have a fizzy blackcurrant, please?" said Sam.

"And what about you, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I'd like a nice cup of tea please, Henry" she replied "and don't go spilling the drinks all over yourself like you did at the police station."

"I wasn't planning on getting it out of a machine" replied Uncle Henry with a smile. "I was going to get it from that kiosk over there."

They had only just finished their drinks when they heard their flight being called and in a short while they were all on the plane and taxiing to the runway.

"This is exciting" said Sam.

"It sure is" replied Jimmy "I can't wait for takeoff."

When the plane reached the end of the runway, the pilot turned the plane to face along it. The engines roared and the plane began to move. It moved slowly at first but gradually began to pick up speed. As the plane gradually got faster and faster the boys got more and more excited, until finally it left the ground.

"We're airborne," said Jimmy excitedly "wow, this is brill."

"It certainly is" said Sam.

"I can see the whole of Oaktree Garden City" said Jimmy as the plane climbed higher.

"So can I" Sam replied.

As the plane flew above the clouds Sam said "wow! I can see the Sun."

"That's right" said Uncle Henry "although you can't see the Sun on a cloudy day, it is still shining above the clouds."

"I suppose you're right," said Sam "but I had never given it much of a thought."

"It's perhaps as well that it is cloudy" commented Auntie Freda. At least we can't see the devastation left by the nuclear war."

"You're right there, Freda" replied Uncle Henry.

After they had been flying for about twenty minutes the stewardess asked "can I get you anything to drink?" She paused for a moment and said as she recognised Auntie Freda "Hello it's Freda Greene isn't it?"

"Why it's Mary isn't it!" replied Auntie Freda. "Why! I didn't recognise you, I haven't seen you since you were a little girl. How long have you worked for this airline?"

"I've work as a stewardess for three years, but before that I worked at the check in desk for two years" replied Mary. "So in all I've worked for the airline for about five years."

"How are your parents" Auntie Freda asked.

"Oh, they're fine" said Mary. "Although dad broke his arm last week. He was showing off to the grandchildren in the park. He wanted to show them just how fast he could run, when he tripped over a tree stump, fell and broke his arm."

"Boy will be boys" said Auntie Freda with a smile.

"They certainly will" commented Mary.

"How are your sisters?"Auntie Freda asked.

"Oh, they're fine" replied Mary. "My eldest sister, Susan, is expecting again."

"Oh, that's great news," said Auntie Freda "please give her my congratulation when you see her."

"Thank you" said Mary "I will. Anyway what could I get you to drink?" she asked.

"What would you boys like?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I'd like a lemonade, please uncle" replied Jimmy.

"And I'd like a fizzy blackcurrant, please" said Sam.

"What about you, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I'd like a nice cup of tea, please, dear" Auntie Freda replied.

"That will be one fizzy blackcurrant, one lemonade, and two cups of tea, please" said Uncle Henry.

"Can I visit the pilot?" Sam asked cheekily.

"Don't be cheeky" Auntie Freda said rebukingly.

"I don't know, in recent times we've had to tighten up on security, but as I know you it may be all right, but I will have to ask the pilot first."said Mary. She went off to see the pilot and came back about five minutes later with a smile on her face "I've had a word with the pilot and he says that it will be all right," she said "would you like to follow me?"

The boys got up quickly and followed Mary.

"I'll see you in a few minutes" said Uncle Henry.

"It's all right," replied Mary "you're all invited."

"Oh, that's nice" replied Uncle Henry.

"How do you do?" said the pilot as they entered the cockpit.

"I'm Captain Robin Smith, this is my co-pilot, Captain Joe Johnson, and this is my navigator Bill Christianson, and who might you be?"

"I'm Jimmy Greene, and this is my best friend Sam Johnson, and this is my Auntie Freda, and my Uncle Henry!" said Jimmy excitedly.

"I've got a son about your age, Jimmy, his name is Jimmy, too" said the pilot.

"Who's flying the plane?" Sam asked rather worriedly when he noticed that neither the pilot nor the co-pilot had their hands on the controls.

"It's all right there is nothing to worry about, Sam," the pilot replied "it's on autopilot.

"Autopilot, what's that?" Sam asked inquisitively.

"It means that the computer is flying the plane" the pilot replied. "We switch on the autopilot when we have levelled out and are flying a straight and level path. It means that we don't have to keep our hands on the controls all the time."

"How high are we flying?" Jimmy asked politely.

"We're at about 30,000 feet, that's about 5 ½ miles into the air" replied the pilot.

"Wow" said Jimmy "that's pretty high."

"It sure is," the pilot replied "it's certainly a long way to fall."

"We're not going to fall out of the sky, are we?!" Sam asked worriedly.

The pilot laughed "of course we're not" he said. "I've been flying for 30 years and I haven't had a crash yet."

"I think we ought to be getting back to our seats," said Uncle Henry "my cup of tea will be getting cold."

"That was very nice of the pilot to let us all have a look at the cockpit" said Auntie Freda after they had all sat down again.

"It certainly was"Uncle Henry replied.

The boys spent the rest of the journey looking out of the window. Uncle Henry decided to have a snooze, and Auntie Freda decided to read a book.

The time passed quickly and before they knew it they were landing at Edinburgh Airport. After leaving the airport they made their way to the bus station.

"I'll go and find out when next bus is to the Wormwood Space Observatory" said Uncle Henry.

"Can we come with you, uncle?" Jimmy asked nicely.

"No, you stay there with your Aunt, I won't be more than a few minutes" Uncle Henry replied.

It didn't take him long and in a short while he arrived back with the necessary information.

"How long will the next bus be, dear?" Auntie Freda asked." Jimmy smiled, he had guessed what Uncle Henry's reply would be.

"About 30 feet" came the reply.

"I left myself open for that," said Auntie Freda laughingly "you knew what I meant."

Sam laughed, he thought it was so funny.

"There's a number 27 bus in about five minutes time, it stops right outside the observatory" Uncle Henry replied.

The bus arrived and it wasn't long before they was pulling up outside the Wormwood Space Observatory.

"Wow, I didn't realise that it was so big" said Jimmy as he gazed at the observatory.

"Neither did I"said Sam.

"Can I ring the bell?" Jimmy asked.

"But I want to" said Sam.

"I think as Jimmy asked first, he should ring it" said Uncle Henry.

Jimmy pressed the bell, and at first they thought that no-one was going to answer.

After a wait of about five minutes Professor Wormwood came to the door.

"It's good to see you all" he said "do come in, have you all had a nice journey?"

"Yes" said Sam "we all went to see the pilot."

"I bet you enjoyed that" the professor replied with a smile.

"I expect you boys would like to have a look through the telescope?"

The boys' eyes lit up with excitement.

"Oo, yes, please" said Jimmy.

The professor took them all into the room where the telescope was.

"Wow," said Jimmy "it's huge."

"We're looking at the Sun at the moment" said the professor "if you come into this room you'll be able to see what we are looking at."

The professor took them into an adjacent room full of computers and television monitors.

"This is where we do all our observations" he said "as you can see the telescope is pointing straight at the Sun."

"What's all those dark spots on the Sun?" Jimmy asked.

"They're Sunspots, Jimmy" the professor replied. "They are actually quite bright and only appear dark because the Sun is so bright."

"Wow," said Jimmy "I never knew that."

"Anyway, I expect you must be tired from your long journey I'll show you to your rooms" said Professor Wormwood.

The professor took them all up a long winding stairway to the top of the building. When they reached the top, the professor took them into a large flat.

"What a lovely flat" Auntie Freda commented as they went in.

"This is the guest flat," said the professor "I do hope you will be comfortable."

"I'm sure that we will be" Uncle Henry replied.

"You will have to excuse me," said the professor "but I must get on and get some more work done."

"Have you seen our rooms?" said Jimmy as he came running out of one of the single rooms. "It's got lots of space rockets and pictures of the universe."

"Wow," said Sam as he went into to see for himself "it's even got a small telescope for looking at the stars."

"If you boys get yourselves ready for bed I'll make us all a nice warm bedtime drink" said Auntie Freda.

"Why don't we listen to the radio to find out what President Christian is doing about a new calendar?" said Uncle Henry.

"That's fine by me" said Auntie Freda.

Uncle Henry switched on the radio. "Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the news reader.

"Since the Earth has increased its rotation speed and we now have a sixteen hour day, a new calendar is required. President Christian has been working on this. We now take you over live to the Royal Palace in Jerusalem. Mr President," continued James Johnson "it has been two weeks now since we discovered that we now have a sixteen hour day and that we would need a new calendar, have you managed to work one out?"

"Yes indeed we have, James" replied the president. "For the moment I intend to keep a 7 day week. This means that there will now be 78 ½ weeks in a year instead of 52 weeks."

"But, Mr President, how can this be done?" James Johnson asked.

"It's very simple," replied President Christian "I intend to shorten the number of hours in the week to compensate for the shorter day."

Instead of there being 168 hours per week we will now have 112. This will solve the problem of there being a 10 ½ day week. Obviously you can't have a week ending with half a day.

All months from January through to December will now have 46 days in them except for February, which will have 42 days and 41 every leap year. There will need to be a leap year every eight years instead of every four, and as you can see February will be one day shorter on a leap year instead of one day longer.

"But Mr President," said James Johnson "why is there a need to change the leap year from every four years to every eight, and why the need to make February one day shorter instead of one day longer?"

"Well James," replied the president "you see, there used be 365 $^{1}/_{4}$ days per year, and as you know, four quarter days make one extra day which was added to the year every four years to prevent the seasons getting out of order. If the extra day wasn't added every four years, over the centuries you could end up with January in the middle of summer in the Northern Hemisphere.

Because we now have 547 $^{7}/_{8}$ days per year, the old leap year of every four years will have to be changed. You see, instead of having one quarter of a day at the end of each year we now have seven eighths of a day. This means that the length of the year will actually be five hundred and forty seven days and fourteen hours, which is two hours short of a full day. This means that we will now have to make the year 548 days in length, which means that the year will be two hours longer than the exact length of the year. If we total up the extra two hours until it equals 16, which is now the length of the day, this will take eight years to do so. By this time we will have gained an extra day which will need to be subtracted, every eight years. I have made provisions for new eight hour and sixteen hour clocks to be made to accommodate the new sixteen hour day. These should be ready in the shops within a few days."

"Thank you Mr President" said James Johnson.

"Thank you James" replied the president.

"Because the days are shorter I think it might be a good idea for us all to get to bed" suggested Uncle Henry.

The next day the professor let the boys have another look through the telescope at the Sun.

"Professor, why is there another bit missing from the Sun?" Jimmy asked.

"It's as I expected" said the professor "it's a total eclipse of the Sun."

"What's an eclipse?" Sam enquired.

"It's when the Moon moves between the Earth and the Sun, and it blocks off it's light."

"But I thought that there wasn't a total eclipse due in this country for a good number of years?!" exclaimed Jimmy.

"That's right, there isn't" replied the professor "it's all due to the increase in the Earth's rotation speed. There's one due today on the same line of latitude as the observatory, and because the Earth is now turning faster it means that our line of longitude is in the place where the eclipse will occur, do you understand what I mean?" **See Footnote 3**

"Not really" Jimmy replied feeling rather puzzled.

"Let me try and make it simpler" said the professor. "Lines of latitude and longitude are the imaginary lines that you see on a map. These lines can pinpoint a position as to where a place is. Latitude will pinpoint how far north or south of the equator, and longitude will pinpoint how

---

Footnote 3

The word of God gives no indication that there will be any eclipse during the Tribulation. It is reasonable to assume, however, that if one were to occur, because of the increase in the Earth's rotation speed at this point of the Tribulation, it could change the location of the eclipse. For example any country on the same line of latitude, as the country where it would have occurred, would see the eclipse instead.

far we are east or west, do you understand so far?"

"Yes" replied Jimmy "I learned that at school."

"The simplest way I can think of explaining is this" said the professor. "If an eclipse were to occur a few hours ahead of us at midday in another country, and that country is on the same line of latitude as we are, because the Earth is turning faster than it was, that would put us at the point where the eclipse would have occurred. We are experiencing an eclipse that should have been seen in another country further east than we are.[29]

"It will be very nice" said Uncle Henry. "I went down to Cornwall to see the last one and all I saw was a lot of clouds."

"Well at least we have a clear day for it this time" said the professor. "Would you boys like to take some photo's of the eclipse?"

"Oo, yes, please" said Jimmy.

"But we've left our cameras upstairs in the flat" said Sam.

"Don't worry about that, Sam" said the professor. "We have a special camera fitted to the telescope." He then showed them how to set the camera. After it was set they all went outside to watch the eclipse.

"You'd better all wear these special protective goggles to look at the Sun with until totality" said the professor.

"Thank you" said Uncle Henry.

They all watched as the Moon crept slowly over the Sun until it eventually blotted it out completely.

"You'll see the diamond ring effect in a moment" said the professor as totality approached "there it is, and there is totality itself."

"Wow" said Jimmy "this is brill."

"Cool" said Sam.

"No, Sam, actually the Sun is very hot" said Uncle Henry jokingly.

"I know that," said Sam with a laugh "you knew what I meant."

"I've never seen anything so beautiful in my life" said Auntie Freda.

"You're right there, Freda" said Uncle Henry "it is beautiful."

"You'll probably find that totality will last a little longer than normal" said the professor. "This is because the Earth is rotating faster than it used too, which means that it will take the Moon's shadow a little longer to overtake us, so to speak."

They all watched until the eclipse was over.

"That was brill"said Jimmy as they went inside.

"Did you notice how dark it went within only a few seconds?" said Sam.

"Yea" said Jimmy "I did."

"Would you like to see how the photos have turned out?" Professor Wormwood asked.

"Yes please" said Jimmy.

They all went back inside and the professor took the film out of the camera and put it into a special machine to develop the photos. "It should only take a few minutes" he said. "I've set the machine to make three sets of prints so that you boys can have a set each to show to your friends, since it was you that set the camera."

"Thank you, that's very good of you"said Uncle Henry.

"Don't mention it" replied the professor.

It didn't take long and soon the pictures were developed.

"Wow," said Jimmy "they're brill.

"They're really cool," said Sam "thanks professor."

"I've also made a DVD recording of the eclipse for you to watch at home."

"Thank you very much" said Auntie Freda.

"You're welcome," replied the professor "I hope you enjoy watching the eclipse again at home."

"I'm sure that we will" said Uncle Henry.

The days quickly passed by and it wasn't long before it was time to go home.

"I'll drive you all to the airport in the observatory's minibus" said the professor.

"Thank you," Uncle Henry replied "that is very kind of you."

"Don't mention it" said the professor.

As they all reached the airport Jimmy said sadly "I wish we could stay a bit longer."

"Perhaps we can come again another time" Auntie Freda said comfortingly "and maybe we can stay a bit longer next time."

"I hope so" said Jimmy with a big sigh.

"Come on" replied Auntie Freda encouragingly "life still has to go on. Feeling sad won't make things any better."

"I suppose your right" Jimmy replied.

"Cheer up Jimmy I'm sure we can come again soon" said Uncle Henry. "I'll tell you what, when we get back I'll show you how to drive the train."

With that Jimmy's face lit up "will you?" he said with a big smile.

"I certainly will" Uncle Henry replied. "We must be going, or we'll miss our plane."

"Thank you Charles for your hospitality" said Uncle Henry.

"Don't mention it," said the professor "it was lovely having you. You must come again sometime, and I must come down to collect my car."

"You'll be very welcome to come and stay with us all" replied Uncle Henry.

"Thank you" the professor replied "it's nice to know I'm welcome."

"Can me and Jimmy have some sweets for the plane?" Sam asked nicely.

"I think that we might be able to do that" said Auntie Freda.

After buying the sweets they boarded the plane and before long they were on their way home.

"I've had a great time"said Jimmy.

"So have I" said Sam.

CHAPTER FIVE ABRAHAM ISAACS

The next day shortly after breakfast Uncle Henry said "Auntie Freda has some shopping to do, so why don't we all have another day out at Oaktree?"

"Oo, yes, please uncle" said Sam.

"Can we go swimming again at Wonder Water World?" Jimmy asked.

"That's what I was about to suggest" replied Uncle Henry.

After breakfast they all set off for Oaktree Garden City.

"Now, Jimmy, no wandering off and getting lost again!" said Auntie Freda.

"I wasn't planning to" Jimmy replied.

"It's a pity we couldn't meet Moses and Elijah" said Sam "I fancy a nice piece of chocolate cake."

"Now don't bring that up again Sam" said Uncle Henry "you'll only start Jimmy insisting that he met them."

"Sorry, uncle," replied Sam.

When they arrived at Oaktree Garden City, Uncle Henry parked the van, and they all set off for the shops. On their way they had to pass someone giving out some leaflets. He stood about seven foot six inches tall. "I wouldn't like to argue with him" Uncle Henry commented.

As they passed by, he handed them a leaflet.

"What does it say, uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"It says," Uncle Henry replied, "'Do you wonder what is happening in the world? Do you want to know more about the future? Who is the real ruler of this world? If you want to know more about this and many more things, then come to hear Abraham Isaacs at Smugglers' Cove at 5.30 pm, Admission free'."

When Auntie Freda heard that it was at Smugglers' Cove, her ears pricked up. She had remembered what Jimmy had said about her prayer being answered at Smugglers' Cove.

"I think it would make a nice outing to hear what Abraham Isaacs has to say" she said.

"Can we go, please uncle?" Jimmy asked.

"I'd like to go as well" said Sam.

"Well it looks like I'm out numbered" replied Uncle Henry. "I think that we can arrange it somehow" he added.

That evening they all piled into Uncle Henry's van and set off for Smugglers' Cove.

"I'm looking forward to visiting the cove again" said Sam.

"No falling in the water again" said Jimmy teasingly.

"I'm not silly enough to go and do it twice" replied Sam.

"You did look funny though" said Jimmy.

"I suppose I did" said Sam "but I didn't think that it was very funny at the time."

As they pulled into the car park at Smugglers' Cove, Jimmy asked "uncle, can we go and see how your vegetables are doing, after the meeting?"

"I wouldn't know how to get there from here" replied Uncle Henry.

"Ah" said Jimmy "it would have been nice."

As they got out of the van, they were surprised to see so many people. There seemed to be hundreds of people, all going in the same direction. A seven-foot six gentleman pointed them to the cliff railway which took them down to the cove.

"I seem to recognise him from somewhere" said Auntie Freda as they boarded the train.

"He was the man who gave us the leaflet at Oaktree" said Uncle Henry.

"I don't know how we can afford to pay for the ride on the cliff railway, Sam, he added when they reached the bottom of the cliff.

"Now don't start that again, uncle" replied Sam with a laugh "you caught me on that once before, and this time it's free, look, it says so on that notice over there."

As they entered Smugglers' Cove, they heard someone playing beautiful music on the organ.

"It sounds like the music is coming from Heaven" commented Auntie Freda.

"You are right there, Freda" Uncle Henry replied, "I've never heard such beautiful music either."

As they went in the cavern they noticed that a platform had been constructed for the meeting and the cavern had been filled with hundreds of chairs.

"Can we go to the front, please uncle, I'd like good view?" Sam asked.

"I don't see why not" replied Uncle Henry.

"Be careful you don't fall in the water, Sam" said Jimmy as they crossed the stream.

"Ha, ha, very funny, I'm not daft enough to do it twice" said Sam as his foot slipped on a stepping stone.

"I thought that you were going to fall in again" said Uncle Henry.

"So did I for a minute there"replied Sam.

They all found some decent seats and sat down.

"There is a wonderful atmosphere in here, Henry," said Auntie Freda "it feels like God is here, I've never felt anything like it before."

"You're right there, Freda" replied Uncle Henry "I can feel it too."

Jimmy looked at his aunt and uncle and smiled.

"Welcome everyone to Smugglers' Cove" said a man on the platform. "I expect you are wondering who we are and why we are here? My name is Joseph Isaacs and I would like to introduce you to my brothers. Starting from my left we have Benjamin on the organ, then we have Ezekiel, and last but not least we have my brother Abraham who is to speak to us a little later.

We are here tonight to tell you about the Lord Jesus Christ, and the most important decision that anyone can ever make in their entire life. But I will let Abraham tell you about that later on.

We are going to start our meeting now with the words of the old hymn by Charles Wesley 'And Can It Be'."

As they began to sing, the music echoed and reverberated around the cavern, which made it sound like angels singing. Uncle Henry commented that he'd never heard such beautiful singing in his entire life.

After they had finished singing the hymn, Joseph said "shall we pray? Heavenly Father," he began "we thank you for the privilege of being able to speak the truths from your word in these dark times. May there be many tonight that come to trust you as their Lord and Saviour. In Jesus Name, Amen."

"It sounds like he has got a hotline to God" commented Uncle Henry.

Jimmy said nothing but gave his uncle a big smile.

"I'm going to ask Ezekiel if he would come and read from the Word of God, the Holy Bible?"

"Thank you, Joseph" said Ezekiel. "I'm going to read from the book of the prophet Isaiah, chapter 53.

1. *'Who hath believed our report? And to whom is the arm of Lord revealed?*

2. *For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of dry ground; He hath no form nor comeliness, and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him.*

3. *He is despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief, and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not.*

4. *Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God and afflicted.*

5. *But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon Him, and with his stripes we are healed.*

6. *All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way, and the Lord hath laid on Him the iniquity of us all.*

7. *He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth; He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shears is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth.*

8. *He was taken from prison and from judgement; and who shall declare His generation? For He was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgression of my people was He stricken.*

9. *And He made His grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death, because He had done no violence, neither was any deceit in His mouth.*

10. *Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise Him; He hath put Him to grief. When thou shalt make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days and the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in His hand.*

11. *He shall see the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied; by His knowledge shall My righteous servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities.*

12. *Therefore will I divide a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong, because He hath poured out His soul unto death; and He was numbered with the transgressors; and He bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressor'.*

May the Lord add His blessing to the reading of His word?"

"Thank you Ezekiel" said Joseph. "The four of us are now going to sing to you in barber shop quartet style an old hymn called 'Man of Sorrows'."

As they began to sing 'Man of sorrows what a Name for the Son of God, who came, ruined

sinners to reclaim, Hallelujah, what a Saviour!' Auntie Freda's eyes began to fill with tears as they described in this song the suffering of the Lord Jesus. "That was beautiful" she said, wiping the tears from her eyes.

"I know what you mean" said Uncle Henry "it was very moving."

"We are now all going to sing another hymn," said Joseph "'Amazing Grace' and after this, my brother Abraham will come and speak to you."

As they sang Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys were all touched by the words.

After they had finished singing Abraham Isaacs stepped forward to speak.

"I have taken my text for tonight from Isaiah chapter 9 and verse 6" he said. "*'For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon His shoulder; and His Name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince Of Peace'.*

For many years, most of my people walked in darkness. When the God of my fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, sent His Messiah, Jesus, into this world we missed Him. We did not realise that Jesus was indeed the Christ of God. But in these last days the Lord has declared to us the truth that Jesus is indeed the Christ. There are one hundred and forty-four thousand of us Jewish evangelists now speaking the Word of God to a lost and dying world.[30] We heard the message delivered by Moses and Elijah and took heed to their words, maybe some of you have met them, I don't know."

Jimmy turned to his aunt and uncle and smiled.

"My brothers and I" continued Abraham Isaacs "are from the tribe of Judah, and we have come with the most important message anyone can ever hear, and that is to know salvation from sin. There are many in the world today who are wondering where we are going. Well, let me tell you, we are now living in the last days. Almost seven years ago, what is known as the Rapture took place, when millions of people disappeared. You, like myself, and many others, were not saved at that time. We did not know Christ as Saviour and therefore got left behind when the Lord took His own to Heaven. We are now living the seventieth week of prophesy mentioned in the book of Daniel chapter 9 and verse 24. Each week represents seven years. All these weeks up to Christ dying on the cross have come to completion, except for one, and that is the one that we are living in right now. This period of time is known as the Tribulation. When the Rapture took place, the Tribulation started. Since the Tribulation lasts seven years and we are almost through it, the Lord Jesus Christ will return in judgement very soon.

Let me ask you my friend, are you ready for Him? No-one knows the exact day or hour that He will return, but return He will! Are you ready?

My friend, you may not live through to the end of the Tribulation. Not one of us knows when the Lord may call us to give an account of how we lived on Earth. You may be here tonight and you are an older person or you may be a child, but none of us know how long we will live. What if you had to meet the Lord this night. There is no-one else in this world who can promise you eternal life other than Jesus.[31]

You say, "but what about President Joshua Christian isn't he the Christ?" No! my friend, he isn't! He is entirely the opposite! He is the beast mentioned in the book of the Revelation chapter 13:verses 3 and 4, let me read it to you. '*And I saw one of his heads as though it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondered after the beast: and they worshipped the dragon who gave power unto the beast; and they worshipped the beast, saying who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?'* Notice who gives the beast power, it is the dragon. "Now who is the dragon," you may ask? Well the dragon is mentioned

in Revelation chapter 12 verses 8 and 9. *'And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil and Satan who deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him'.* The person who gives Joshua Christian his power is none other than the Devil himself.

But you say, "what about the fact that he rose from the dead? Doesn't that prove that he is either God, or that God is with him since only God can raise the dead?" No! my friend, it most certainly does not! You see, what they didn't tell you on the news was that Joshua Christian did not die. Satan is a liar and a deceiver. The president was only in a coma and was unconscious, very seriously ill, and at the point of death for three days. The president's aides called in Satanists to pray over him. This they did and the president was seen to rise from the dead. But the truth of the matter is that he never died. Nowhere in the Bible does it tell us that Satan can raise the dead. Joshua Christian is the one that the Bible calls the man of sin, or the Antichrist.

My friend, do not under any circumstances receive the new identification mark that Joshua Christian intends everyone to have. It will mean that you will be condemned to Hell for certain, with no chance of redemption.

Now, you say, "surely a man of your intelligence doesn't believe that there is a Hell in this day and age?" Yes! my friend, I most certainly do. The Lord Jesus Christ, the most loving man that ever walked this earth, spoke more about Hell than He did about Heaven. The Bible describes it as: outer darkness, unquenchable fire, the lake of fire, eternal separation from God, a place of torment, a place where there is gnashing of teeth, and where the worm dieth not. Not a very nice place is it? There is nothing, absolutely nothing, far worse than going to Hell! But, my friend the good news is that no-one need go there. God took upon Himself the form of a man, in Jesus Christ, to die in your place so that you can be forgiven of your sin. But if you receive the mark, you will be damned in Hell forever.

I must, however, warn you my friend, if you refuse the mark you will incur the anger of Joshua Christian. Yes, it may, and most probably will cost you your life, but the alternative is far worse. Let me read to you what it says in the book of Revelation 13 verses 16 and 17 *'And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or on their foreheads: And no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name'.* Isn't that exactly what Father Wright is doing with the backing and blessing of Joshua Christian? Verse 18 continues *'Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six'.* For those of you who may not know, a score equals twenty, so threescore is sixty. This means that the number of the mark of the beast is six hundred, and sixty six. My friend do not receive his mark. Yes, it may cost you your life, but the alternative is far worse.

Let me read to you what it says in Revelation 20 and verses 11 to 15 *'And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it: and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to his works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire'.*

The Book of Life is only there to prove to them that know not Christ, that their names are not

in the Book. Let me ask you my friend, is your name written in the Book of Life?! If you come to Christ tonight your name will be entered into the Book and you will never face the Great White Throne Judgement. Yes, if you come to Christ it will very likely cost you your life at the hand of Joshua Christian. But if you don't, it will most certainly without a doubt cost you your soul in Hell, and you will be at the Great White Throne Judgement and will be cast into the lake of fire for all eternity. There, you will remember this night, and think to yourself "what a fool I was. I had chance to avoid this awful place and I turned it down because I was afraid that President Christian might take my life or cause me to suffer in some way. I took the mark so that I and my family wouldn't starve to death, and here I am in Hell for all eternity." My friend, it is that serious! Your eternal destiny hangs in the balance! It is a question of do you come to Christ and risk losing your life, or, refuse Christ and take the mark and lose your soul in Hell! In the Gospel of Luke chapter 12 verses 4 and 5 we read *'And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. But I forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear Him which after He hath killed hath power to cast into Hell: yea, I say unto you, Fear Him'.* In other words, don't be afraid of Joshua Christian. All he can do at worst is to take your life, but Almighty God, has the power the cast you into Hell.

Did you know that the Roman numerals for six hundred and sixty-six are DCLXVI? These are the very letters that President Joshua Christian has called his new monetary system. Did you also know that the letters are actually President Christian's initials? His name is not Joshua at all. It is just a name that he wishes to be called by. His real name is Daniel Christian Leonard Xerxes Victor Icobod. Notice his initials equal the number of his name. N.B.See Footnote 4 President Christian is indeed the Antichrist. He is the most wicked, and devious man that has ever walked this planet, and he is possessed of the Devil himself.

But, you say, "President Christian is a wonderful man, he is such a peace-loving man. Just look at all he's done for the world." Yes! my friend, just look at it all! Through his doing, millions upon millions of people have been killed. Just look at the war he had with almost the entire planet.

But you say, "doesn't the fact that he fought this war to end all wars prove that he is a man of peace?" No! my friend it does not! Joshua Christian is not a man of peace at all. Just think about that statement for a moment. 'He went to war, to wipe out all wars'?! Ask yourself, what kind of logic is that? He went to war and wiped out millions of people when there may never have been a war in the first place. That is not the logic of peace-loving man. It is the thinking of a man of war! President Christian is a wolf in sheep's clothing, he is a schemer and a deceiver. Underneath his politeness, and seeming kindness, is a very cruel and evil man. He is not interested in world peace at all. The only thing that Joshua Christian is interested in is world domination, and making himself the world ruler. How dare he compare himself with the Lord Jesus Christ, the one who is the true God and future ruler of this world, there is no comparison!

Footnote 4

I am not implying here that I know the name of the Anti-Christ, nor am I indicating that the scripture indicates what his name will be. This is purely speculative.

Although I have used Roman Numerals here for the number of the Anti-Christ's name. It is more likely that this number will be in the Jewish form of letter numbering in which each letter is given a value. This means that he may have three names consisting of letters in each of his name which will all add up to six, and thus resulting in the number of the Anti-Christ's name, six, six, six.

The Lord Jesus Christ is the entire opposite to Joshua Christian. Jesus is the most loving and kindest man that ever walked the Earth. Although He is God, whilst He was here He humbled Himself and didn't demand His rights as God but He took the form of a servant.[32] He didn't at that time proclaim Himself as ruler, although He is. He walked this Earth healing the sick, raising the dead. Yes, my friend, Jesus Christ has power over death. You probably thought that death is the end. My friend, I tell you that Jesus Christ has power over life and death itself. In the gospel of John chapter 11 and verse 43 when Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead He cried in a loud voice *"Lazarus, come forth"* and Lazarus came out of the tomb very much alive. Do you know why Jesus singled out Lazarus? The answer is found in John's Gospel 5 and verse 25 which reads *"Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God and live."* If Jesus hadn't singled out Lazarus, every person within the sound of His voice would have been raised from the dead.

When the Rapture took place almost seven years ago, did you ever wonder why there were open graves? We read in 1 Thessalonians 4:16-18 *'For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words'.*

The Lord has raised His followers from the dead. He has taken them to Heaven along with all the other missing millions of people. If you and I had been ready at that time, we too would have been taken. The sad fact is, that we weren't, and therefore we will have to go through the Tribulation. But there is still hope, you can still come to know Jesus and be ready when He returns. Yes, the Lord Jesus Christ is coming back again. He is going to reign as the mighty KING OF KINGS AND THE LORD OF LORDS! He is going to be the ruler, not President Christian. Yes, the Lord Jesus Christ is going to return and rule this world. Let me read to you what it says in Revelation 19 and verses 11 to16. *'And I saw Heaven opened, and behold a white horse: and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns; and He had a name written, that no man knew, but He Himself. And He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and His Name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in Heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it He should smite the nations: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. And He hath on His vesture and on His thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS'.*

My friend, when Jesus returns will you be ready for Him?!

Now, you say, when will the Lord return, He hasn't returned yet, and I don't think he ever will.[6] My friend may I remind you that many people today are suffering the consequences of that kind of thinking? If they had known Christ almost seven years ago, they would have been taken when the Lord returned and called His people home, and would now be in Heaven. As to the exact day and hour I don't know, and neither does anyone else. The Bible says that no-one knows the day nor the hour when the Lord will return, but we can know when it is near. Since the Rapture took place almost seven years ago, and the Tribulation is seven years in length, it doesn't take much working out as to when the Lord will return in all of His splendour and glory.

Don't put it off any longer. You missed out at the Rapture, don't miss out on salvation altogether. It says in 2 Corinthians 6 and verse 2 *'behold now is the accepted time, behold now*

is the day of salvation. What promise do you have that you will even live through the Tribulation, or for that matter, even see tomorrow? You say "but I'm only young, I've got years ahead of me yet." Have you?! You don't have to walk very far through any cemetery to find that your age is represented, and they must have thought that very same thing. Today is the day to accept Christ, you have no promise of tomorrow. Come to Christ today, come while there is still time, don't wait till tomorrow, tomorrow may be too late. God loves you so much and He doesn't want any one of you to be lost. He loves you so much that He sent His only Son, Jesus, into this world to save you. Listen to what it says in John's Gospel chapter 3 verses 16 and 17 *'For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved'*. Now when verse 16 speaks of believing, it is not referring to mere head belief. In other words it is not saying that if you believe that there is a God, or you believe that Jesus exists, everything will be all right. It says in the book of James chapter 2 and verse 19 *'Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils believe also and tremble'*. You see, even the demons believe and they tremble. They know that there is a God and that Jesus is alive. So John 3:16 and 17 cannot be speaking of mere head belief. If I were to come to you and say that I believe in you, I wouldn't mean that I believe that you exist. I know that you exist, you are sitting right there in front of me. No! what I would be saying is that I put my trust in you, I can depend on you. All who put their trust in, and depend upon Jesus for salvation from sin will receive it. Jesus loves you so much that He was willing to give His life for you on the cross. Just think of it! The King of glory left Heaven and came down to this old sinful world and was born as baby in Bethlehem. He was born in a draughty old stable, He wasn't born in a palace. There was no cradle for Him, He had to make do with a cattle trough.[33]

He walked this earth for thirty three years doing nothing but good. He healed the sick and raised the dead. He was full of love, as indeed He still is today.

Yet, at the age of thirty three, cruel men took Him and nailed Him to a wooden cross.

The night before He was crucified He went to the garden of Gethsemane to pray. His soul was in agony, and He sweat as it were great drops of blood falling to the ground.[34] He prayed to His Heavenly Father *"If it be possible let this cup pass from me, but nevertheless not my will, but yours be done."* [35] Jesus knew that not only was He to face death on the cross, but that He had to bear the sin of the world, and also be forsaken by His Father. God sent an angel to strengthen Him.[36]

In His hour of need all His friends forsook Him.[37] One of them even betrayed Him for just thirty pieces of silver, which was no more than the price of a slave.[38]

He was arrested and taken from judgement hall to judgement hall in the dead of night.[39]

They plucked the beard from His cheeks, they beat Him, they spat in his face, and whipped Him.[40] Every time the whip struck, it tore great gashes in His back. They whipped Him until His back looked like a field that had been newly plowed.[41]

They placed a crown of thorns upon His head.[42] The thorns were like great nails which sunk deep into his brow.

After all the scourging He was made to carry His own cross on which He was to be crucified.[43] He was so weak from the scourging of the hour, that on the way to the place of crucifixion He fell beneath the weight of the cross. They had to get someone from the crowd to help Him to carry it.[44]

When they reached the place called Golgotha, they crucified Him between two common

thieves.[45] They took Him, and put nails through His hands and feet and nailed Him to the cross, and as the Roman soldiers dropped the cross into its socket, every joint of Christ's body was pulled out of place.[46]

Even on the cross they taunted Him saying *"He saved others, Himself He cannot save If He be the King of Israel, let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe Him. He trusted in God let Him deliver Him now, if He will have Him: for He said I am the Son Of God.""* [47]

At that point Auntie Freda began to cry when she saw for the first time all that Jesus had done for her, and how much He loved her. Sam went over to comfort her, but he could hardly hold back the tears for himself. Even Uncle Henry was very moved. "I must give my life to this wonderful person called Jesus, whatever the cost" he thought to himself.

"Now, let me ask you," continued Abraham Isaacs "would you forgive those who had treated you so cruelly? Yet, my friend, the amazing and wonderful thing is that from the cross Jesus said *"Father, forgive them for they know not what they do."*[48] My friend there is not a sin too big for Jesus to forgive. You may be here tonight and you may think you're too bigger sinner for God to forgive. My friend, Jesus doesn't care what you have done. You may be the biggest sinner that ever lived, if you are willing to repent and turn from your sin He will forgive you. Then, on the other hand you may be saying I'm not a bad person, I've never done any harm to anyone. I always try to help others. I'm as good as anyone else."

"That's me" thought Auntie Freda contentedly to herself.

"My friend, you may well be a good person when you compare yourself with other people," continued Abraham Isaacs "but when you measure yourself with God's standard of perfection, you fall far short of the mark. Let's say for example that you sin once a day. Even working it out on the old 24 hour day, it would be three hundred and sixty five sins a year, or three hundred and sixty six every leap year. If we take the average life span as seventy years, that is approximately twenty five thousand, six hundred, and twenty sins. If you work it out on the new 16 hour day, it would be even worse. You're not quite so perfect as you first thought, are you? I think that you would agree with me that you probably commit more than one sin a day. You see, God demands that we never sin, no, not even once throughout your entire life time. We must be absolutely perfect for God too be able to accept us into Heaven. There is no-one, including myself, that has never sinned. The Bible says *'for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God'.*[49] '*There are none righteous, no not one'.*[50] When it says all have sinned, it means all. There is not a man, woman, boy, or girl, that has ever walked this planet that has never sinned, excepting, of course, the Lord Jesus Christ. Even if you could live a perfect life from now on, what about the sins you have already committed"

At that point Auntie Freda realised that she wasn't as good a person as she thought, and realised she needed to be saved.

"There is hope," continued Abraham Isaacs "there is a way that you can be made righteous in God's sight, and that is through what the Lord Jesus Christ did on the cross. Yes, God must, and will punish all sin, but God took your sin and laid it upon Jesus.

On the day of His crucifixion, at the sixth hour until the ninth there was a terrible darkness.[51] At the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice saying *"My God, My God, why have you forsaken me?"*[52] God the Father had to turn His back on His Son. Why? because Jesus was bearing your sin and mine, and God the Father is so Holy that He cannot look upon sin.

The Bible says that Jesus was made sin for us.[53]

Then Jesus again cried out in a loud voice **"it is finished!"**[54] Now, you may ask, "what is

finished?" Jesus has completed the work He came to do. The way of forgiveness has been made, the Devil is defeated, there is power to be victorious over sin. Death, Hell, and the grave are defeated. This was not the cry of someone who was weak from being on the cross. It was the voice of the triumphant victor, Jesus Christ the mighty conqueror, the KING OF KINGS AND THE LORD OF LORDS!

After He had said 'it is finished' Jesus said "Father into thy hand I commit my spirit"and with these words He dismissed His Spirit. Jesus is the only person able to do this. He said "I have power to lay down my life and I have power to take it again."[55] He proved this, when on the third day He rose from the dead.

Now, you may ask, "how do we know that Jesus really died, that He wasn't just unconscious, and that He didn't revive and come out of the tomb giving the appearance that He rose from the dead?" That is a good question.

Firstly, one of His friends went to the Roman governor Pilate to beg for the body of Jesus.[56] The Roman authorities would never have allowed them the take the body without first making absolutely sure that Jesus was really dead.

Secondly, crucifixion is a terribly cruel form of execution, even the Romans abandoned at a later date, because it was so cruel. As the weight of the person bears down on the nails it has the effect of suffocation, and the only way a person can breath is by pushing themselves up by pushing down on the nails in their feet to catch a breath. The way to stop them from doing this was by breaking their legs. Roman soldiers were sent to do this because it was the Sabbath day the next day and the Jewish leaders didn't want the bodies to be left on the cross. When they came to Jesus, they found that He was dead already. One of the soldiers put a spear into the side of Jesus and out came blood and water.[57] Humanly speaking up to that point it may have been possible for Jesus to have been alive, but after that it certainly wasn't.

You ask, "and how do you know that Jesus really rose from the dead and that His disciples didn't come and steal the body?"[58] You know, my friend, that is the story that has been passed on from generation to generation among my people, but when you think about it, how could they have stolen the body. There was a Roman guard on duty at the tomb for fear of that very thing happening.[59] If His enemies had taken the body, they would have most certainly have displayed it to prove that Jesus was still dead, so where did the body of Jesus go to? The only answer is that Jesus rose from the dead just like the Bible says.[60] Forty days later He ascended to Heaven where He now sits at the right hand of God the Father on high.[61]

Yes, Jesus is alive and is soon to return in all His splendour and glory. My friend, I have good news, you can know your sins forgiven. You can know that you have a home in Heaven when the Lord calls you or when He returns. But if you reject His offer of salvation, you will have to bear the punishment of your sin for yourself. Jesus is the only way to God. Only by accepting His forgiveness is there any hope of salvation. Only by coming to the Lord Jesus Christ and asking Him for forgiveness and being willing to repent of your sin is there any hope.

But, you say "what about other religions? Don't all roads lead God?" No my friend, they don't! In John 14:6, Jesus said *"I am the way, the truth and the life, no man can come to the Father but by me"* these are His words not mine. Jesus said that there is no other way, but by Him!

I'm going to ask you to make that commitment to follow Jesus tonight, but remember it is costly to follow Him. Jesus said that you must be willing to take up your cross and follow Him. It may well cost you your life and incur the wrath of Joshua Christian, but the alternative is far worse. That is, to die unsaved and end up in Hell! I'm going to ask you to come to Christ

tonight. I'm going to ask you to get up out of your seat and come and stand in front of the platform. Now walking out here to the front won't save you, but I am asking you to come forward to show to everyone here that you are willing to follow Christ whatever the cost. It may, and probably will cost you your life, but the alternative is far worse. As you come forward, we are going to sing the beautiful hymn by Charlotte Elliot 'Just As I Am'."

Benjamin struck up the notes on the organ and they began to sing:

'Just as I am, without one plea
But that Thy blood was shed for me,
And that Thou bidd'st me come to thee,
Oh Lamb of God, I come, I come'!

Before they had got to the end of the first verse Auntie Freda turned to Uncle Henry and said with tears in her eyes "I've got to give my life to Jesus."

Uncle Henry replied "so have I, Freda."

They both walk out to the front as they sang verse two.

'Just as I am, and waiting not
To rid my soul of one dark blot,
To Thee whose blood can cleanse each spot,
Oh Lamb of God, I come, I come'!

"There are many who are here tonight,"continued Abraham Isaacs as Benjamin softly played 'Just As I Am' "and you know, that you should be here, at the front, to make your commitment to the Lord. You may never get another opportunity like you have tonight. If you feel that you should be here at the front to make your commitment to Christ, then the Lord is speaking to you. The scripture says 'My Spirit will not always strive with a man'. If you put it off you may never hear the voice of God speaking to you again. We're now going to sing verse three. You come while there is still time, whilst the Lord is speaking to you."

They continued to sing the hymn.

'Just as I am, though tossed about
With many a conflict many a doubt,
Fightings and fears within, without,
Oh Lamb of God, I come, I come'!

At that point Sam turned to Jimmy and said "that verse describes me. I'd like to give my life to Jesus, but I'm afraid to go forward on my own. Will you come with me, Jimmy?"

Jimmy smiled and said lovingly "Yes, of course I will, Sam! I'd like to go forward and make my commitment to the Lord, public."

Both he and Sam walked forward and were soon standing in front of the platform amongst all the other people. There were tears in Sam's eyes as they continued to sing the hymn.

'Just as I am, Thou wilt receive,
Wilt welcome, pardon, cleanse, relieve,

Because Thy promise I believe,
Oh Lamb of God, I come, I come'!

When they came to the last verse, Jimmy's eyes also began to fill with tears as they sang.

'Just as I am of that free love,
The breadth, length, depth, and height to prove,
Here for a season, then above,
Oh Lamb of God, I come, I come'!

"I never knew that Jesus loved me so much and gave so much for me, Jimmy" said Sam tearfully.

"Neither did I, till I met Moses and Elijah" replied Jimmy.

After the hymn had finished Abraham Isaacs addressed those, who had come forward. "I've not asked you to come forward to become a follower of me" he said. "Neither has the act of walking out to the front saved you. If we were here for a month and you walked to the front every night you would still not be saved. But tonight you have walked out to make a public statement that you want to make a stand for the Lord Jesus Christ and that you want to follow Him whatever the cost. To accept Christ you must first, be willing to repent of your sin. That means that you are willing to turn away from everything that you know is wrong.

Secondly, you have to receive the gift of eternal life that Jesus offers you. If I were to offer you a gift, it would not be yours until you took it from me, and it is the same with eternal life. You have to reach out by faith and take it. I'm now going to lead you all in a prayer, very similar to one that I prayed when I received Christ. If you really mean business with God, I would like you to pray it out loud after me. *Oh God, I realise that I am a sinner and in need of your forgiveness. I am sorry for my sin. I am willing to turn away from everything I know to be sinful. I put my trust in you, and you alone, and what you did on the cross for my salvation. I ask you to forgive me now, and save me. In Jesus Name. Amen.* If you prayed that prayer and really meant it, you now belong to the Lord Jesus Christ and you will one day live and reign with Him.

I would like to ask those of you who really want to follow the Lord, if you would like to be baptised. Now I would like to say that being baptised has nothing to do with your salvation. The sincerity of your heart when you prayed the prayer of commitment will determine that. If you prayed that prayer and really meant it, then you are saved whether you get baptised or not. But if you do, it will prove that you intend to follow the Lord whatever the cost. In the New Testament whenever anyone got saved they were baptised almost straight away. Don't put it off, you may not get another chance. If you'd like to take up this opportunity, I would like you to follow my brother Joseph into the small cavern at the back here. We would also like to give you some literature and have a talk with you about the commitment you have made tonight and what baptism is all about. If you decide not to be baptised, we won't hold it against you, but we would still like to give you some literature and have a talk with you about the commitment you have made tonight. Would you like to follow my brother Ezekiel into the smaller cavern on my right?"

"I'd like to be baptised, uncle" said Jimmy who had by now managed to find his aunt and uncle amongst the crowd.

"So would I" Sam added.

"Your aunt and I have decided to be baptised so I think that should be all right" replied Uncle

Henry.

They all followed Joseph into a small cavern.

"This is nice dear" commented Auntie Freda as they entered the small cavern.

"Yes" replied Uncle Henry "I've not been in this part of the caverns before."

When all those who wished to be baptised had entered the cavern, Joseph Isaacs stood on a small platform and addressed everyone.

"Please find yourselves a seat" he said.

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys found four seats that were together and sat down.

"We have a number of followers of Jesus here tonight, who have come to be known by the name of the Underground Church," said Joseph Isaacs "although scripturally they are not actually the Church. The Church was taken out of this world at the Rapture. Abraham, myself, and the rest of us feel that it would be far nicer if we had one of our friends come and speak to each of you one to one, rather than me address you as a mass. We would like to give each of you some literature and a Bible which has been published by the Church Underground Press. When you have all had a talk with one of my friends, I would like to tell you more about baptism. If you remain in your seats, one of our friends will be along in a moment."

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys hadn't been waiting long, when a young ginger headed boy with green eyes of about the same age as Jimmy, approached them.

"Hello, Jimmy" said the young lad "my name is Danny."

Jimmy looked flabbergasted "how did you know my name?" he asked.

"Remember when you met Moses and Elijah?" Danny asked.

"Yes," said Jimmy "that's when I came to know and follow the Lord, but how did you know?"

"Well," said Danny "you came into our cafe and had a piece of chocolate cake and a glass of lemonade."

Just then Danny's mother arrived.

"Mum, do you remember, Jimmy?" Danny asked.

"Oh, yes indeed I do," Danny's mum replied "after you had gone, Jimmy, Moses and Elijah came back and also lead us to the Lord. We've been praying for you and your family ever since."

"Did you ever run out of food?" Jimmy asked.

"No, it was just like Elijah had said," Danny's mum replied "when I got back to the larder it was stoked up with food, and I couldn't work out where it all came from. And do you know what, I still have a larder full of food?"

"I'm sorry," said Jimmy "I should have introduced you. This is my Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda and my best friend Sam."

"I'm very pleased to meet you," said Danny's mum "my name is Janet Smith."

"So you did meet Moses and Elijah after all, Jimmy," said Uncle Henry "it looks like your aunt and I owe you an apology."

"That's all right uncle," said Jimmy "I forgive you."

"I'm sorry we ever doubted you" said Auntie Freda.

Jimmy said nothing but he gave his aunt and uncle a big loving smile. "My auntie, uncle, and Sam have come to know the Lord tonight" he said.

"Why that is wonderful news" said Janet. "Danny and I are members of the Underground Church. Danny, I think that it might be a good idea if you have a talk with Sam about the decision he has made tonight, whilst I have a talk with Jimmy's aunt and uncle." "Okay, mum" said Danny "would you like to come and sit on the chairs just over here, Sam?" Danny asked.

"I'd like to come as well, Danny" said Jimmy.

After the boys had gone, Janet began to talk with Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda. "We have some literature and a Bible for each of you to help you in the decision you have made tonight"she said. "You have made the most important decision that anyone can make in their entire life. When you prayed the prayer of commitment, a few moments ago you became a child of God. You see it says here in the Gospel of John chapter 1 and verse 12 *'But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name'*."

"You mean that tonight I have actually become a daughter of God?" Auntie Freda asked in amazement.

"That's right," said Janet "when you accepted Jesus tonight you became a child of the living God, and you can guarantee that He has also accepted you. You see it says in John's gospel chapter 6 and verse 37 *'All that the Father giveth me shall come to me, and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out'*. Now," continued Janet "I would like to ask you have you come? Were you sincere when you prayed the prayer of commitment?"

"Yes," Uncle Henry replied "I was."

"So was I" said Auntie Freda.

"Well, Jesus said that all who come to Him He will not cast out, so has He taken you in?" Janet asked.

"I don't quite understand what you mean" said Auntie Freda.

"Well basically what Jesus is saying, is that if you come to Him, He will never turn you away" Janet replied.

"Wow," said Uncle Henry "Jesus has accepted us, Freda, we now belong to Him."

"I feel so clean" commented Auntie Freda.

"So do I" said Uncle Henry."

"That is because you have been forgiven" Janet replied.

After they had been talking for about twenty minutes the boys returned, and Joseph Isaacs once again addressed everyone.

"We would now like to tell you about baptism and what it represents" he said. "Baptism is a picture of what you have done tonight in giving your life to the Lord Jesus Christ. It represents your death, burial, and resurrection with Christ, and that you are associating with Him in His death. If we were to leave you under the water long enough you would die, and coming up out of the water represents your resurrection. It represents that you have died to your old life and are now living in the newness of life that Christ has given you. Baptism also shows to the world that you are nailing your colours to the mast, so to speak, and that you are willing to follow Him whatever the cost.

We have prepared changing rooms at the far end of the cavern on each side, the men on the left and the ladies on the right. In each room you will find white baptismal robes for you to wear. When you are ready, we will all go into the main cavern again."

As they went back into the main cavern Joseph Isaacs said "if you could all go over to the waterfall, the water is deep enough for us to baptise you."

"I'm nervous" said Jimmy to Sam.

"So am I" said Sam.

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys all waited in line for their turn to come.

Eventually Abraham Isaacs looked at Jimmy and said "it's your turn next son.

After Jimmy had entered the water, Abraham asked "what is your name, son?"

"It's Jimmy Greene" Jimmy replied.

"Well, Jimmy, do you know Jesus as your personal Lord and Saviour?" Abraham asked.

"Yes" Jimmy replied.

"And are you willing to turn from all that you know to be wrong?" Abraham continued.

"Yes" said Jimmy.

"And are you prepared to follow The Lord Jesus Christ, whatever the cost?"said Abraham.

"I am"replied Jimmy.

"Then we baptise you, in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, in Jesus Name" said Abraham as he and Joseph dunked Jimmy into the water.

"Oh Jesus! I do love you!" said Jimmy as he came up out of the water with a big smile on his face that went from ear to ear.

Next it was Sam's turn, followed by Uncle Henry, and Auntie Freda.

After everyone had been baptised, they all returned to the small cavern to get dry and to get changed.

After they were dry Abraham once again addressed everyone.

"My brothers and I thought it would be nice if we could all break bread together before we go our separate ways" he said. "For those of you who are not used to the term breaking of bread, it means taking holy communion."

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys, found it a very moving experience as they had never broken bread in their entire lives.

After the breaking of bread had finished Abraham once again addressed everyone. "Before we go, we would like to take your name and address, and invite you all to join the Underground Church" he said. "These are very dark days we are living in, and we are going to need each other all the more as we go through the Tribulation. And now before we go, can we pray. Dear Heavenly Father, we thank you for all the dear folk who have made a commitment to you tonight and have been baptised and we ask you to bless them. We asked you to be with us all, and help us in these dark days, to follow you, whatever the cost may be. We ask you to return for us soon. Even so, come Lord Jesus. In Jesus Name. Amen."

After Abraham had finished praying, Janet and Danny came over to Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys to ask if they would like to join the Underground Church.

"Jimmy turned to his uncle and asked longingly "can we join please uncle?"

"I had every intention of joining" Uncle Henry replied.

"We have to meet in secret," said Janet "we've been meeting at the back of my cafe. If you'd all like to come along tomorrow night, it will be great to see you. Please come to the cafe and we will serve you as though you were a customer. It's an ideal place to meet, and because it is a cafe, no-one ever takes any notice that we have large numbers of people. I don't know what we will do when I am called to take the mark of the beast."

"You don't intend taking it, do you?!" Uncle Henry asked alarmingly.

"Of course not," Janet replied "but since I won't be taking the mark I won't be able to run a cafe either."

"Oh, I see," replied Uncle Henry "you don't have to worry about that, I have farm and plenty of land where we can all meet in secret. Freda even won a luxury house boat that is hidden from view that we could meet on."

"Henry, you are the answer to our prayers" said Janet. "You see, we have all been seeking the Lord as to how we can continue to meet when we are all called to take the mark."

"We'll see you tomorrow night then" said Uncle Henry.

By the time they left Smugglers' Cove night had fallen and there was a lovely moon out.

"It's been such a wonderful evening" said Auntie Freda as they walked along the beach in the

silvery moonlight

"It certainly has" Uncle Henry replied.

"I've just remembered, what I prayed about at the seaside, just after the Rapture" said Auntie Freda.

"What was that?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Don't you remember?" Auntie Freda replied "I asked God to show us all, the way to be saved."

"Oh yes, I remember" said Uncle Henry "the Lord certainly did hear your prayer."

"He certainly did" said Auntie Freda.

In a short while they reached the lift and were on their way to the top of the cliff.

"Just look, auntie, at the way the moon is shining on the sea"said Sam.

Auntie Freda managed to bring herself to look even though she didn't like the height. "It looks beautiful" she said "have you seen it, Henry?"

"That is beautiful" said Uncle Henry as he looked at the view. "You can still see the glory of God even in this dark World.

Before long they were at the top of the cliff and in the van and on their way home. It didn't take them long and soon they were all back at the cottage.

"I'll go and make a nice cup of tea" said Auntie Freda as they all went inside.

"Can Sam and me have a cup of hot chocolate?" Jimmy asked politely.

"Of course you can" Auntie Freda replied "I was about to ask if both of you would like one."

It didn't take her long and in a short while Auntie Freda came through with a pot of tea for her and Uncle Henry and two mugs of hot chocolate for the boys.

When they'd all sat down to discuss the evenings events, Jimmy said "thank you for letting me be baptised uncle."

"That's all right Jimmy," Uncle Henry replied " it's been a really wonderful evening. I never knew how wonderful it is to know Jesus."

"It certainly has," said Jimmy "I'm really pleased that you all came to know Jesus tonight."

"So am I" Uncle Henry replied.

"Don't you think that it might be a good idea if we had a time of prayer, dear?" said Auntie Freda.

"That is a good idea, Freda" Uncle Henry replied. "Dear Lord Jesus, thank you for this evening, and thank you for saving us all" he said. "Please help us all to follow you whatever it might cost us. Lord we love you. Thank you again for saving us all. Amen."

Next Jimmy prayed "thank you Lord Jesus, for saving my auntie and uncle and Sam tonight," he said "and thank you for letting me get baptised. Oh, I do really love you Jesus! Oh thank you Lord! Amen."

Sam prayed next, followed by Auntie Freda.

After they had finished praying Auntie Freda said "it's time you boys were getting ready for bed."

"Can me and Sam talk for a while?" Jimmy asked, looking longingly at his aunt with his deep blue eyes.

"I do wish that you wouldn't do that, Jimmy," she said "you know I find it hard to say no when you do. I suppose it will be all right, but not for long it is way past your bedtime."

The boys hurriedly got ready, and after they'd gone upstairs Sam came to Jimmy's room for a chat. "Wasn't it a wonderful evening?" he said.

"It certainly was" Jimmy replied "it was such a wonderful experience being baptised. I was so

filled with joy, and I was really thrilled that you all came to know Jesus tonight."

"Thank you," said Sam "I thought the whole evening was really brill."

Jimmy suddenly started laughing.

"What are you laughing at, Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"I'm sorry, Sam," said Jimmy "but I couldn't help seeing the funny side. You know, that is the second time you've been to Smugglers' Cove and both times you've ended up getting wet. I bet you didn't expect to go into the water again."

"That's right," said Sam and he too started to laugh "but at least this time I was dressed for it."

"It's time you were settling down now boys" said Auntie Freda "your uncle and I are coming to bed now ourselves."

"Okay," said Sam as he went back to his room."

"Goodnight auntie" said Sam.

"Goodnight Sam" Auntie Freda replied with a smile.

"I'm really pleased that you and Uncle Henry got saved tonight" said Jimmy.

"So am I,"said Auntie Freda "it was a wonderful evening. I never knew that it was possible to come to know Jesus in a personal way, I feel so different."

"Neither did I," said Jimmy "until I met Moses and Elijah."

"I'm sorry we ever doubted you," said Auntie Freda "we should have known better."

"That's all right, auntie, I forgive you" Jimmy replied lovingly.

"What were Moses and Elijah like?" Auntie Freda enquired.

"They were two of the most loving and kindest people I have ever met" said Jimmy.

"How did you come to meet them?" Auntie Freda asked.

"Well you know when we were looking in that toy shop in Oaktree and I got left behind" Jimmy replied.

"Yes, I remember" said Auntie Freda "your uncle and I were very worried."

"Well, when I looked around, you'd all gone and I began to cry" said Jimmy. "It was then I remembered the police station in the High Street, so I thought that I would go there. When I turned the corner, it was then that I met Moses and Elijah. Elijah pick me up in his arms and said "what's the matter Jimmy?" I didn't recognise him at first and wondered how he knew my name. I told him how I'd got lost. Elijah then said to me "don't worry, Jimmy, dry your tears. All this has been arranged by the Lord." It was then that I recognised who it was. I knew that I should be frightened because I knew that these men had stood up against President Christian. But when I looked into the eyes of Elijah I saw no anger there. All I could see was love and compassion and I felt perfectly at peace."

"Then what happened?" Auntie Freda asked with interest.

"It was then that they took me into the cafe and bought me a lemonade and a piece of chocolate cake and told me how to be saved."

"Why that is a wonderful story,"said Auntie Freda "I just wish that we could have all been there and got saved a lot sooner."

"Would you mind if I read my Bible and pray for ten minutes before I go to sleep?"

"I suppose it will be all right," replied Auntie Freda kindly. "I tell you what, Jimmy, how would you like another hot chocolate drink before you go to sleep?"

"Oo, yes, please, auntie" Jimmy replied.

"I'll see if Sam would like one too" said Auntie Freda.

"Oo yes please" came the reply from Sam's room."

"You weren't supposed to be listening" said Auntie Freda with a laugh.

"Sorry," Sam replied "can I read my Bible too, please?"

"Of course you can," replied Auntie Freda "I won't be long boys."

Just as she said, it didn't take her long and soon she returned with their hot drinks. She took Sam his drink first and then she took Jimmy his drink. "Don't read too long" she said.

"I won't do" Jimmy replied. "Goodnight auntie, I love you" he said.

Auntie Freda smiled "and I love you too, Jimmy, goodnight sunshine" she said.

Jimmy read his Bible for a few minutes before he had a time of prayer. "Thank you, Lord for everything that has happened this evening, I really do love you. Goodnight Lord" he said lovingly and reverently" before he went to sleep.

The next day, an official looking letter with a Jerusalem postmark arrived on the doormat. "Whatever can it be?" said Auntie Freda.

"It's just as I feared" Uncle Henry replied as he opened the envelope "it is a final warning to receive the mark of 'that' President Christian."

"Well what does it say, Henry?" Auntie Freda asked.

"It says, Uncle Henry replied

> *"'Dear Mr Greene.*
>
> *Neither you, nor your wife, have yet received the DCLXVI identification mark.*
>
> *I regret to inform you that from 11 am tomorrow your European Monetary Cards will be cancelled. Failure of you and your wife to attend the Tattoo Shop, High Street, Oaktree Garden City by 11 am tomorrow to receive the new identification mark, will result in neither of you being able to buy or sell anything, anywhere, not only in the UFSE but also anywhere in the entire World.*
>
> *Yours sincerely,*
>
> *J Robinson JP'."*

"Well I don't like the sound of that, Henry" said Auntie Freda.

"Neither do I, Freda" Uncle Henry replied.

"Well, what are we going to do now?" Auntie Freda asked rather worriedly.

"I know one thing I'm not going to do, and that is panic" Uncle Henry replied.

"Jesus will look after us" said Jimmy.

"But how will we eat?" Auntie Freda asked.

"But auntie, have you forgotten what happened to Janet?" Jimmy replied lovingly.

"What do you mean?" Auntie Freda enquired.

"The Lord has always seen to it that she has a larder full of food."

"Your right, Jimmy, I should not have worried, I should have known better" said Auntie Freda.

"I know one thing, Freda" said Uncle Henry "Abraham Isaacs was right. We followers of Jesus are going to really need each other as we go through the Tribulation."

"I can't wait for this evening" said Auntie Freda "it is going to be nice to meet up with other fellow believers."

"Neither can I, Freda" replied Uncle Henry.

That evening they set off for the meeting, and before long they all arrived at Janet Smith's Cafe.

"Wow" said Sam as they all went inside "is this where you met Moses and Elijah?"

"No," Jimmy replied "I met them in the High Street, but this is the place where I met the Lord."

"Hello there," said Janet Smith with a smile "it's nice to see you all again, you're the first to arrive. How would you boys like a nice piece of chocolate cake?"

"Oo, yes, please" said Sam.

"That would be smashing" said Jimmy.

"Can I offer you all something to drink?" Janet asked.

"I think a pot of tea for two would be nice" Uncle Henry replied.

"And what you boys like?" Janet asked.

"I'd like a fizzy blackcurrant" Sam replied.

"And I'd like a lemonade, please" said Jimmy. "Where's Danny?" he asked politely.

"He's upstairs playing with his train set," Janet replied "you can join him if you like."

"Oo, yes, please" said Jimmy.

"That would be smashing" said Sam.

"If you go through the back and up the stairs, you'll find Danny in the room on left" said Janet.

"We got our final warning about taking the mark of 'that' President Christian today" said Auntie Freda after the boys had gone.

"Oh dear," Janet replied "that is bad news. We'll have to pray about it this evening."

Just then the door to the cafe opened and in walked a tall jovial middle aged man and his wife.

"Hello" he said with a smile "I see we have got some new customers."

"That's right," Janet replied "this is Henry and Freda Greene. They got saved last night at the meeting in Smugglers' Cove."

"Well, I'm very pleased to meet you, and to hear your great news" said the gentleman "I've known the Lord for about three years now. I can tell you I wouldn't swap knowing the Him for anything.

Oh, I almost forgot, I'm John and this is my wife Sandra, and believe it or not our surname is also Greene."

"It must be a very popular name" said Uncle Henry jokingly.

"You're probably right, there, Henry" John replied with a laugh.

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, John and Sandra found that they had a lot in common, and got on like a house on fire. As they talked, more people began to arrive and soon it was time for the meeting to begin.

Janet went upstairs to get the boys, and they all returned shortly and the meeting began.

John Greene opened in prayer. "Dear Heavenly Father we thank you that we are all able to meet with you again this evening" he said. "We don't know how long we are going to be free to do so, but we thank you for the privilege. We also thank you for those who came to know you last night at the meeting and for those of whom you have brought into our midst this evening. We now ask your blessing on our meeting and give us something new from your word as we study it this evening. In Jesus Name. Amen.

Tonight we have some new people in our midst" John continued. "I've already met two of them, perhaps you would both like to introduce yourselves to the group, Henry?"

"Well, I'm Henry Greene, and this is my wife Freda and my nephew Jimmy and his best friend Sam"said Uncle Henry. We came to know the Lord last night at the meeting of Abraham Isaacs."

"And I came to know the Lord right here in this cafe" Jimmy interrupted.

"Then you must be the young man who met Moses and Elijah, and who we have all been

praying for"said John.

"That right" said Jimmy "Moses and Elijah lead me to the Lord in the cafe."

"Well it's lovely to meet you, Jimmy" said John. "We been praying for your family too, but of course we didn't know your names. And now, here you all are at the meeting, isn't the Lord good?"

"You were telling me about a letter you received this morning, Henry" Janet interrupted.

"That's right" replied Uncle Henry "we received our final warning about taking the mark."

"'Oh dear'" commented John "that is bad news. We must pray about the situation for you."

"If you run out of food, you can always call on me" said Janet. "You know, ever since Moses and Elijah visited my cafe I've never run out of food."

"Thank you," said Uncle Henry "you are very kind."

"That is the very least I can do" Janet replied with a smile.

"Shall we have a time of prayer?" John asked.

John prayed first then Janet and then each member of the group prayed in turn. They prayed for about half an hour, then they studied the Bible for a further half an hour. When they had finished John said "it's wonderful that we can meet like this, but we just don't know how much longer we will be able to do so. Pretty soon Janet and all the rest of us, will be given our final warning about taking the mark. When Janet gets her final notice we will have nowhere to meet because she won't be able to buy or sell, which means she won't be able to run a cafe.

Oh, and by the way, Janet," John added "we have all very much appreciated you letting us meet here day by day."

"That's all right" Janet replied "I've enjoyed you meeting here, and it's nice to think that I'm doing it for the Lord."

"I think that I might be able to help you find somewhere to meet" Uncle Henry interrupted. "You see Freda and I have a houseboat moored in a small cove near to my farm. We could meet there when Janet gets her final notice about taking the mark."

"Thank you, Henry" John replied "that's very kind of you.

"Auntie Freda won it in a crossword competition" Jimmy added.

The next day Uncle Henry decided to go over to deliver some of his produce to Old Joe.

"Would you boys like to come and see Old Joe this morning?" he asked.

"Yes please" replied Jimmy with a smile "that would be smashing wouldn't it, Sam?"

"It certainly would" replied Sam.

"Would you like to come too, Freda?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Thanks, Henry, but I think I'll give it a miss this time," Auntie Freda replied "I've got a lot of work to do, but you all go and have a nice time."

"Thanks, auntie, we will" said Jimmy.

On their way over to Old Joe's, Jimmy said "isn't it wonderful knowing the Lord?"

"It certainly is" said Sam with a smile "I feel so different."

"That's because you are different" Jimmy replied.

"I'll tell you one thing, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry "I wish that I'd come to know the Lord years ago."

"I do love Jesus" said Jimmy.

"So do I, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry.

"Me too" said Sam.

Just then they reach Old Joe's shop.

"It's nice to see you all again," said Old Joe "would you boys like a mint?"

"Oo, yes, please" said Jimmy "wouldn't we Sam?"

"You bet" Sam replied.

Just then Tommy came out from the back of the shop "would you like to play Cowboys and Indians?" he asked.

"Can we uncle?" Jimmy asked longingly. "I think we can spare the time" Uncle Henry replied.

The boys played outside while Old Joe and Uncle Henry talked over old times.

The time passed quickly and soon it was time to go, and Uncle Henry called the boys in.

"Do we have to go?" said Sam.

"Well if we don't, your aunt will be wondering where we are" Uncle Henry replied.

"I almost forgot," said Old Joe "I haven't paid you for your goods.

Uncle Henry handed Old Joe his monetary card. "I'm sorry, Henry" said Old Joe as he swiped the card through the till "it seems that your card is invalid. I'll have to let you have your goods back. Sorry, Henry, but there is no way that I can pay you."

"That all right Joe" said Uncle Henry "its not your fault."

As they were leaving, Uncle Henry couldn't help noticing the letters DCLXVI followed by 377- 67892 tattooed on the back of Old Joe's right hand.

"Did you notice, that there seemed to be something different about Old Joe?" Jimmy asked as they were on their way home.

"Yes" Uncle Henry replied sadly "he's received the mark of the beast."

Shortly after they'd arrived home, there was a knock at the door.

"I'll get it" said Uncle Henry. When he answered the door, he found that it was Janet Smith and Danny.

"I'm afraid that I have some bad news, Henry" she said.

"I see," said Uncle Henry "you'd better come in."

"Would you like a cup of tea?" Auntie Freda asked.

"That would be lovely, thank you Freda" said Janet.

Auntie Freda went into the kitchen and presently returned with a nice cup of tea for Janet and a glass of lemonade for Danny. "Thank you, Freda" said Janet as she received the tea.

"Perhaps you should tell us what the news is?" Auntie Freda said with a smile.

"Well," said Janet "last night, after the meeting, all of the members of the group were arrested, except for John and Sandra, myself, and Danny."

"That is bad news" said Uncle Henry "however did the authorities find out about the group."

"I've no idea, Henry" Janet replied "but it is certain that it would not be safe to meet at my shop tonight."

"I totally agree with you" said Uncle Henry. "Would you like to met over here at the farm? We can hold the meeting on the boat."

"Do you think that it will be a good idea to meet tonight?" Janet asked.

"Perhaps you're right," said Uncle Henry "it might be a bit risky. Perhaps we should give it a miss for a few days. We can always phone to arrange a meeting at a later date."

"That is the last thing we must do!" said Janet alarmingly "I'm sure that the authorities have all our phone lines bugged. That may be how the others were caught."

"Yes of course," said Uncle Henry "I should have thought of that. Perhaps we could use a code, maybe something like arranging to all go fishing together."

"That sounds a good idea, Henry" said Janet.

"Do you and Danny have somewhere to stay?" Auntie Freda asked kindly.

"Yes," Janet replied "we'll be staying with my cousin who lives in Oaktree Garden City, she

a member of another group. I'd better give you her phone number, do you have a pen and paper?"

"I'm sure we've got one somewhere" said Uncle Henry "I think there is one by the phone. Would you believe it, it won't write?!" he said as he tested the pen.

"Never mind, Henry," said Janet "I've found one in my handbag. Janet wrote down the telephone number and handed it to Uncle Henry.

"Well I think that we'd better be going now, it may be a bit risky if we stay too long,"said Janet "are you ready Danny?"

"Ah, mum, do we have to go now?" Danny asked. "Jimmy said that I could play with him and Sam on his electric train set."

"I'm sorry Danny," Janet replied "but it is too risky to stay to long in case we all get arrested."

"I suppose you're right mum" said Danny reluctantly.

"You know I'm right "said Janet with a smile. "We can always come again another day when it is safer."

After Janet and Danny had left, Uncle Henry suggested that they all had a game of cricket.

"That sounds a good idea" said Jimmy.

"I want to be in, first" said Sam.

"And I'd like to bowl first" Jimmy added.

Sam had a good innings and scored thirty runs.

"It's your turn to be in, now, uncle" said Jimmy.

"Is it," said Uncle Henry "I'd better get to the wicket then?"

Jimmy bowled the ball, and as he did so, Uncle Henry was distracted by a squirrel that ran across their cricket pitch.

"Your out" said Jimmy as the ball hit the wicket.

"That's not fair" said Uncle Henry with a smile "I was distracted."

"Well you should have kept your eye on the ball," said Jimmy laughingly "but as you said, you were distracted so I suppose we can give you another chance."

Jimmy bowled the ball again and this time Uncle Henry swung his bat to hit the ball but as he did so he hit the wicket knocking the bails off. Both Jimmy and Sam laughed "well, you're out this time, uncle" said Jimmy wiping the tears from his eyes.

"I suppose you're right, there, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry who by now was also laughing.

"It's your turn now, auntie" said Jimmy.

"I'll have a go but I don't think that I'll be very good at it" Auntie Freda replied as she picked up the cricket bat.

"Watch out auntie, here comes the ball" said Jimmy.

Auntie Freda took a swipe at the ball and she knocked it almost out of sight.

"Wow what a hit" said Sam as he went running after the ball. By the time he returned Auntie Freda had got twenty runs.

"It must have been a fluke hit,"said Jimmy "I bet you can't hit it like that again."

Jimmy bowled the ball again, and Auntie Freda took another swipe at it, and she knocked it almost out of sight for the second time. Sam went running after it, and by the time he had retrieved it Auntie Freda had scored another twenty runs.

"I thought you said that you were not very good" said Jimmy.

"I didn't think that I would be" said Auntie Freda.

Eventually Jimmy did manage to bowl her out.

Next it was Jimmy's turn to bat, and he managed to score thirty runs. They continued playing

cricket until it was time for tea.

It was about a week later when the telephone rang, "I'll get it" said Uncle Henry. As he picked up the phone, he found that it was Janet Smith.

"Is it all right for us all to come fishing with you tonight?" she asked.

"Yes," said Uncle Henry that will be all right."

When evening came the first people to arrive, were John Greene and his wife Sandra.

"It's nice to see you again, Henry" said John.

"Would you both like a cup of tea?" Auntie Freda asked.

"That would be lovely, Freda" Sandra replied.

"It was very sad to hear the news that most of the group have been arrested" said Uncle Henry.

"Yes, it certainly came as a surprise" John replied. "I don't know how the authorities found out, and I don't know how it was that all of us didn't get arrested."

"Obviously that Lord was protecting us" said Uncle Henry.

"You're right there, Henry" said John.

Just then Janet and Danny arrived and Auntie Freda went to the door and let them in.

"I hope you won't mind but I've brought you all some food from my larder" said Janet.

"Are you sure that you can spare it?" Auntie Freda enquired.

"Of course I can," said Janet "ever since Elijah said I would never run out of food, no matter how much I take from the larder, the amount never gets any less."

"O yes, of course" replied Auntie Freda "I'd forgotten about that."

"I thought that it would be a good idea if we had the meeting on the boat, it would also be safer there" said Uncle Henry.

"I totally agree with you, Henry" John replied "is it far from here?"

"No, it's not too far" Uncle Henry replied.

"Uncle Henry has built a miniature railway, that leads to the boat" said Jimmy.

"Have you really, Henry?" John asked.

"Well I wouldn't say that it goes to the boat, but it does go to the top of the cliff where the boat is moored in the cove" Uncle Henry replied.

"I'd be very interested to see it," said John "I used to be a train driver."

Both Jimmy's and Sam's faces lit up with delight.

"Did you ever drive the trains around here?" Jimmy asked.

"Yes, I'd did" replied John "you never know I may even have taken you boys to the seaside."

"The last time we were at the seaside was the day after the Rapture" said Jimmy.

"Where did you go" John asked.

"East-Hampton" Jimmy replied.

"Well I was driving on that route that day so it may well have been me" John replied.

"Anyway, I'd love to see this miniature railway of yours, Henry" said John.

Uncle Henry took John outside to where the railway was.

"I'll tell you what," he said "why don't we all travel to the boat on the train?"

"I'd love that" said John "does it take very long?"

"No, it only takes a few minutes" Uncle Henry replied.

They all went outside and got on the train to the top of the cliff.

"It's all right, we don't have to walk down the cliff, there is a lift"said Uncle Henry as they got off the train.

"Who built the lift?" John asked enquiringly.

"I don't know" Uncle Henry replied "it was here when I bought the farm."

"Can I push the button for the lift?" Jimmy asked.

"But I want to" said Sam.

"Now, now, boys don't fall out" said Auntie Freda "I think we should let Danny push the button."

Danny pushed the button, and they boarded the lift and soon they were on board the boat.

"My, this is nice"commented John "did you say that you won it in a crossword competition?"

"Well sort of," Uncle Henry replied "but it wasn't me, it was Freda."

"Well you certainly did very well to win it" said John.

"I think that it may not be safe to stay here for the meeting" said Uncle Henry "since the other day."

"Yes," said John "I haven't got a clue as to how they found out about the group."

"I know a place that's a lot safer" said Uncle Henry. "Would you cast off please Freda?" he asked.

Auntie Freda cast off and Uncle Henry turned the boat around and headed it into the cave.

"Would you turn the spot lamp on please Jimmy?" Uncle Henry asked.

"I sure will, uncle" Jimmy replied.

"Where is it we're going?" John asked.

"It's a hiding place that we found sometime ago when 'that' President Christian decided he wanted to give us all that stupid mark" Uncle Henry replied.

"That's strange, I only had half a tank of fuel left and now its full."

"I'm not surprised" Janet replied "that sort of thing is happening to me all the time, ever since I met Moses and Elijah."

"Oh yes," said Uncle Henry "I'd forgotten about that. It must be because you're on board. The Lord has been good to us, hasn't He?"

"He certainly has" said Janet.

They had been travelling for about forty minutes when they came to the opening that led to the secret cavern.

"We should be safe in here providing we stay on the boat" said Uncle Henry.

"Why do we have to stay on the boat?" Sam asked inquisitively.

"Because if we have the meeting off the boat the sound will echo through the cave and we might be caught" Uncle Henry replied.

"Oh" said Sam "I never thought."

"It's beautiful in here"said John "but why are there lights in the cavern?"

"The lights are on the same circuit as Smugglers' Cove" Uncle Henry replied.

"You mean that this is part of Smugglers' Cove?" John asked.

"That's right," said Uncle Henry "it was meant to be open to the public but due to the nuclear war, it didn't happen."

"Oo look, uncle," said Jimmy "the vegetables you planted have grown."

"That's right, Jimmy, they have"said Uncle Henry "we will certainly have plenty to eat. The Lord is certainly looking after us.

After the meeting they set off back the cottage.

"Perhaps we could meet again tomorrow?" suggested John.

"I think that should be all right" replied Uncle Henry.

CHAPTER SIX

THE GREAT TRIBULATION DRAWS TO A CLOSE

It was about a week later, that Uncle Henry asked shortly after breakfast if everyone would like to hear the news?

"That would be nice" said Auntie Freda.

Uncle Henry went over to the television and switched it on.

"Here is the news, and this James Johnson reading it" said the news reader. "We have just received news that a large volcano, the largest the world has ever known has suddenly erupted without warning. We have not yet been given the exact location. Out of this volcano, smoke is bellowing into the Earth's atmosphere and blotting out the Sun."

James Johnson paused for a moment and then continued "we have just received some terrifying news. Strange looking creatures have been seen, the like of which has never been seen since the Earth began have been observed coming out of the smoke from the volcano. These creatures are reported to be the most hideous looking monsters that the World has ever known. It is reported that they resemble locusts, and are said to look like horses that are ready for battle, and there appears to be something on their heads that looks like golden crowns. Their teeth are like that of a lion and they have tails like scorpions. They appear to have breastplates of iron, and when they fly they make the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. They have the faces of men, the hair of women, and it looks very much like they have a nasty sting in their tails.[62]

We have also received news that President Christian has been attacked by a swarm of these monsters. He is said to be in severe pain but his condition is comfortable.

It has been reported that these monsters are attacking people throughout the entire World, they swarm, then they just attack without reason."

At that moment there was heard in the studio a rumbling noise that sounded like a chariot charge. James Johnson at first thought that it was coming from one of the other studios next door which was showing a film about the Roman Empire. "We are sorry about the background noise" he said "we will get it rectified as soon as possible."

No sooner had he got the words from his mouth, when into the studio flew a swarm of the hideous looking locusts, which then started stinging everyone in the in sight. Everyone started screaming with pain as the locust began to sting them all. James Johnson tried to get out of the studio and away from the locusts, but before he a chance, they pounced on him, and he too began to scream with pain.

"I think that I'd better turn that off" said Uncle Henry "I don't really want to listen to any more news."

"I can quite understand why" replied Auntie Freda.

Just then they all heard a noise that sounded like a chariot charge.

"Whatever is that noise?" Auntie Freda asked "I don't like the sound of that."

"Neither do I, Freda," Uncle Henry replied "if it's what I think it is we could be in big trouble."

Sure enough Uncle Henry's fears were confirmed. When he looked out of the window he saw that the sky was black with what looked like locusts and they were headed straight for the cottage. Uncle Henry called to the boys who were outside playing and totally unaware of the latest news. "You'd better come inside quickly!" he shouted.

"Why, whatever is the matter?" Jimmy enquired as he and Sam came running in.

"Didn't you hear that noise?" said Uncle Henry.

"What noise?" Jimmy asked.

"That noise that sounds like a chariot charge" Uncle Henry replied.

"Oh," said Jimmy "both me and Sam thought that you were watching a film on the telly."

"It's far more serious than that," said Uncle Henry "there is a large volcano that has erupted and locusts are coming out of it."

"What so bad about that?" Jimmy enquired.

"They are hideous looking creatures and they are attacking people, and there is a swarm heading right towards the cottage" Uncle Henry replied.

Sam gave a gulp, "I'm glad you called us inside" he said.

"Do you think that we should take cover?" Auntie Freda asked.

"Take cover," replied Uncle Henry "take cover where?! You saw how they got into the television studio and attacked everyone."

"I'm frightened" said Sam.

"I'm not" said Jimmy with confidence.

"Why ever not?" Sam asked.

"Because Jesus won't let anything hurt us" Jimmy replied.

"I suppose you're right" said Sam "I never thought of that."

Auntie Freda and Uncle Henry weren't so confident as they stood looking out of the window at the swarm of locusts that were heading straight for them. As they watched the locusts getting closer and closer a strange thing happened, the swarm as it approached the cottage, suddenly turned off and headed in another direction.[63]

"Wow, that was a close call" said Uncle Henry.

Just then there was a knock at the door.

"I wonder who that could be?" said Auntie Freda.

"I don't know," Uncle Henry replied "I'd better go and find out."

When Uncle Henry went to answer the door, he found Janet and Danny standing there.

"I hope that you don't mind us coming early for the meeting but Danny kept on saying that he was bored and he wished that he had someone to play with, so I thought that we'd come a bit early."

"We don't mind at all, do come in," said Uncle Henry "I'm sure that Jimmy and Sam will be glad of someone else to play with."

"It's nice to see you again," said Auntie Freda "would you like a cup of tea?"

"Thank you, Freda, that would be lovely" Janet replied. "I've brought you some food from my larder"she added.

"You're so kind" said Auntie Freda.

"That's all right,"said Janet "that is the least I can do, since I never run out of food."

"I keep forgetting about that" Auntie Freda replied.

"Danny would you like to come and play with me and Sam on my electric train set?" Jimmy asked.

"You bet," said Danny.

"Have you heard the news about the locusts?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Heard about them? We've seen lots of the things as I was driving here with Danny" Janet replied. "It is absolutely horrible watching those things. On the way here Danny and I saw people being attacked by those so-called locusts. They were screaming out in agony and wreathing in pain. It was an awful thing to see I can tell you."

"I thought you looked a bit shaken when you arrived" said Auntie Freda.

"I was," Janet replied "and so was Danny although he was doing his best not to show it."

It was later that day when Uncle Henry asked "does anyone mind if I put the news on?"

"Not at all dear," Auntie Freda replied "as long as it's all right with Janet."

"I don't mind," said Janet "I'd like to hear the news myself."

Uncle Henry went over and switched on the television only to find that he couldn't get a picture.

"Whatever is the matter with this thing," he said "it was working earlier on?"

"Perhaps there is a fault with the transmitter, dear" said Auntie Freda.

"That's possible I suppose" Uncle Henry replied "I'll try the radio." Uncle Henry switched it on just in time for the news.

"Here is the news and this is Roger Thomas reading it" said the announcer.

"There are to be no television transmission for the remainder of the day due to all of the tv crew being attacked by those hideous locusts. All other stations are also to remain off the air as a sign of respect. James Johnson has been taken to hospital along with the rest of the crew suffering from the severe stings of these hideous locusts. James is said to be in a stable condition.

More and more of these hideous locusts are reported to be coming out of the smoke from the volcano. There seems to be no limit to these creatures.

A man suffering from an attack from these monsters, stabbed himself with a kitchen knife because he couldn't take the pain of being sting. He was admitted to the local hospital and when the surgeons removed the knife they found that it had gone straight through his heart. Everyone at the hospital was amazed that the man is still alive.

A woman who had been attacked by the locusts drank deadly poison because she could no longer stand the pain. The strange thing is, the poison had no effect.

After being attacked by the locusts, a man throw himself in front of a train at a local railway station, but somehow, and no-one knows how, the train missed him.

Whatever is going on, it would appear that it is not even possible to commit suicide at the moment? [64]

President Christian has decided to intensify his search for followers of Jesus of Nazareth. He said, and I quote "these followers of Jesus of Nazareth are nothing more than trouble makers. They are the ones who are bringing about all of the trouble in the world. Because they refuse to bow the knee and worship my statue, I intend to hunt them down and wipe them off the face of the earth."

Just then there was a knock at the door, and this time it was John and Sandra arriving for the meeting.

"Do come in" said Uncle Henry as he answered the door.

"Would you both like a cup of tea?" Auntie Freda asked.

"That would be lovely" Sandra replied.

"Have you heard the terrible news about the locusts?" Uncle Henry asked.

"Tell me about it!" John replied "it's absolutely terrible. On our way here we saw those horrible things attacking people, it was a horrible sight. People were screaming out in pain. Someone even threw themselves in front of my car, I only just managed to stop in time.

We also saw an elderly man throw himself off a tall building. I was just about to stop the car to see if he was all right, when he got up and walked away."

"Did you hear that President Christian is on the warpath again against us followers of Jesus of Nazareth?" Uncle Henry asked.

"No, I didn't know that," John replied.

"Perhaps we'd better meet on the boat" said Uncle Henry.

"I couldn't agree with you more, Henry" said John.

Auntie Freda went to get the boys from upstairs where they were happily playing on Jimmy's train set.

When she returned with boys, they all set off for the boat. It didn't take them long and soon they were on board.

"It might be best if we go to the cavern for the meeting" Uncle Henry suggested. "That sounds a good idea," said John.

Auntie Freda cast off and Uncle Henry turned the boat around and headed into the cave.

"You know, I still can't get over how every time we meet on the boat I always have a full tank of fuel" Uncle Henry commented.

"I know," John replied "if it were not for Janet I wouldn't have any petrol in my car."

"Do you mean that your tank never runs dry?" Uncle Henry asked.

"No," said Janet with a smile "it's because my car never runs dry I'm able to let John syphon petrol from my tank, and when he's finished I still have a full tank."

After about forty minutes they arrived at the cavern.

"I don't know why, but I feel that I should moor the boat behind the waterfall" said Uncle Henry.

After he had done so, they all settled down to the meeting.

"Shall we start in prayer?" John suggested.

Everyone bowed their heads and John began to pray "Heavenly Father, we thank you for keeping us all safe today. We thank you that we are still able to meet together like this, and as we study your word now, please be with us and bless this time together, in Jesus Name, Amen.

Did you know that the recent events that have taken place about the locust are mentioned in the Bible?" John asked.

"No, I didn't" Uncle Henry replied.

"Perhaps we could look it up" said John. "It's found in the last book of the Bible, Revelation chapter 9 and verses 1-11, would you like to read it, Sandra?"

Sandra began to read:

"*And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth; and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should torment five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when it striketh a man. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle, and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions. And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five months. And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.*"

"Thank you" said John.

"Wow," said Jimmy "I didn't know that, that was in the Bible."

"Neither did I" said Uncle Henry.

"The locusts look exactly like they are described in the Bible" said Sam.

"I thought that it might be good if this evening we looked at our hope for the future" said John. "President Christian can do his worst, but we have a hope, and that is the return of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"When do you think that He will return?" Jimmy asked excitedly.

"I don't know," John replied "and neither does anyone else. You see Jesus said in Matthew chapter 24 verse 36 that no-one knows the day or the hour that He will return. However, since we are now in the Tribulation, period I think we could safely say that the return of our Lord can't be too far away."

"I'm really looking forward to meeting Jesus face to face" said Jimmy.

"Me too," said Sam "since I came to know Him, I really love Him."

"You know," said John "one day all of our sorrows are going to be behind us, all our heartaches and pain will be behind us. Would you like to read, Revelation 21 verses 1- 4, for us Jimmy?"

Jimmy began to read:

"*And I saw a new heaven and a earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes, and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.*"

"That's beautiful," said Auntie Freda with tears in her eyes "what a wonderful hope we have."

"We certainly do," John replied "it gives us a hope for the future. But you know, the thing I'm looking forward to most of all is seeing my Lord and Saviour face to face."

"Me too," said Jimmy "I do love Jesus, and I can't wait to meet Him."

After the meeting had finished Uncle Henry said "why don't we all have a game of football before we all go home?"

"That sounds a good idea, Henry," John replied "it's nice to have a time of fellowship."

"Can we have a game of football, please mum?" Danny asked nicely.

"Well we are not in a hurry to get home, so I think it would be nice" Janet replied.

"We won't be able to play for very long though" said Uncle Henry. "Smugglers' Cove closes in about half an hour, which means that we will lose our lights."

They all had a great time. Jimmy scored three goals in the first five minutes.

"I'm going to score again" he said as he got the ball from John and started to run with it.

"Oh no you're not" said Sam as he got the ball from Jimmy.

"Oh yes I am" said Jimmy as he tackled Sam for control of the ball. Sam gave the ball a hard kick intending to pass it to John but it missed and headed into the water.

"I'll get it," said Sam "I think that I can just about reach it."

He reached out to get the ball but as he did so his foot slipped and he fell into the water. Jimmy started to laugh.

"It's not funny" said Sam crossly.

"I'm sorry," said Jimmy "but you did look funny. It seems that every time you come anywhere

near Smugglers' Cove you end up getting wet."

"Never mind," said Auntie Freda kindly "you go and get yourself dry on the boat I'll come and make you a nice warm hot chocolate drink in a few minutes."

With that Sam's face lit up "thank you" he said with a smile.

They had been playing football for about another ten minutes when Uncle Henry thought he heard another boat coming "what was that" he said.

"What was what, dear?" Auntie Freda asked.

"I thought that I heard boat coming" Uncle Henry replied.

Everyone stopped what they were doing and listened.

"You're right, Henry there is boat coming" said John. "Quick everyone we'd better get back to the boat.

They all rushed back to the boat and boarded just before a federal police boat entered the cavern where only a few minutes earlier they had been playing football.

"Quiet everyone," whispered Uncle Henry "they won't be able to see or hear us behind the water fall if we are quiet."

"I thought I heard someone in here, Bert" said one of the police officers.

"So did I, Fred" said the other "but I don't see where they could hide."

John began to whisper a prayer. "Heavenly Father we desperately need your help" he said. "Please protect us all now, we ask it in Jesus Name. Amen." Just as he'd finished praying the lights went out.

"Well if there is anyone hiding in here, we're not going to find them very easily in the dark," said one of the officers "beside I want to get home for my supper."

"Wow that was a close shave" said Uncle Henry after the police had gone.

"It certainly was" replied John "perhaps we'd better thank the Lord for keeping us safe!"

"That sounds a good idea" Uncle Henry replied.

John began to pray "Heavenly Father, we thank you for keeping us all safe and for all your loving care. We just want to tell you just how much we love you. Thank you for sending Jesus to die for us and for Your Salvation found in Him. We just love and thank you. In Jesus Name. Amen."

"It is obviously not safe for any of us to go home tonight," said Uncle Henry "so would you all like to stay with us on the boat."

"That's very kind of you" John replied "but are you sure that you have the room?"

"Yes, of course we have," Uncle Henry replied "the boat is big enough for ten people. And we've also got plenty of food since Janet brought us some earlier."

"Can we stay, please mum?" Danny asked longingly.

"Well, it's certainly not safe to go home, Janet replied "so I think that we'd better accept Henry's kind offer."

"I think that it might be a good idea if we live on the boat from now on, Freda" said Uncle Henry.

"You could be right there, dear"said Auntie Freda.

It was five months later that Uncle Henry once again switched on the news.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the news reader. "We have received news today that the locusts have finally gone. They seemed to disappear as fast as they arrived. It is reported, that at 10 o'clock this morning, our time, the locusts mysteriously disappeared.

We have received news that thousands of people have started dying without there being any

medical explanation.[65] See Footnote 5 This phenomenon seems to be worldwide. We now take you over live to the Royal Presidential Hospital in Jerusalem where our on the spot reporter Roger Thomas has been talking to some of the staff. So Roger, what can you tell us about this strange phenomenon?"

"As far as the doctors know there is no explanation" Roger Thomas replied. "I have with me the leading surgeon at the hospital, Mr Sam Carver."

With that Jimmy bust out laughing "his name certainly suits his job."

"I wouldn't like him to operate on me" said Sam.

"Quiet boys, we're trying to listen!" said Uncle Henry sternly."

"So what do you think is causing this strange phenomena?" Roger Thomas asked.

"At this point we are not really sure" said Sam Carver.

"Do you think that it might be a virus of some sort left over from the locusts?" Roger Thomas asked.

"It is possible, I suppose, but at this point it is too early to say" Sam Carver replied. "People have been dropping down like flies. When we have done post mortems on their bodies there is never any sign of why they died."

"Do you mean to say that all those who have died have had nothing wrong with them?" Roger Thomas enquired.

"Well not exactly," the surgeon replied "you see, we have had the usual influx of patients with the usual illnesses, but for most of those brought in as DOA have had absolutely nothing wrong with them, they should not have died."

"Thank you, Mr Carver," said Roger Thomas "we now hand you back to the studio."

"Thank you Roger"said James Johnson.

"You know, it's a strange thing, for the last five months when we were suffering from the locusts no-one was able to die, and it wasn't even possible to commit suicide, and now, people are dying like flies," he commented "it just doesn't seem to add up.

We now take you over live to the Royal Presidential Palace in Jerusalem where President Christian has a message for us" said James Johnson.

"My dear European friends," the president began "and of course the rest of the world. You may be worrying about what is happening in the world, but let me waylay your fears. I managed to take care of the locusts, and I managed to rid the world of that horrible menace. So be at peace, my friends, if I can take care of the locusts, I can surely take care of this problem that has arisen. Thank you for listening."

"What a creep," said Uncle Henry crossly "who does he think he is kidding? It was predicted in the Bible that those locusts would prey on men and women for a period of five months."

"Now calm down, dear," said Auntie Freda "we all know what 'that' President Christian is like."

"Well," said Uncle Henry "that man makes my blood boil, but I suppose you are right, it's no good getting worked up over something like that."

Footnote 5

The scripture is not clear as to this event found in Revelation 9:15-21. I have interpreted it as an army of demons which take the lives of those who don't know Christ, but it is just as likely to be an earthly army. However, the scripture is not clear as to who, or how, this earthly army will kill one third of the world's population. On reading the scripture it reads like modern day warfare. This judgement which is brought on the Earth must not be confused with the one in revelation 16:12, although they are similar they are two separate events.

"Would you like a cup of tea, dear?" Auntie Freda asked.

"That would be nice, Freda" Uncle Henry replied.

"Wow, all those deaths" said Sam "that's scary, you never know who will be next."

"Well I'm not afraid!" said Jimmy assuredly.

"Why ever not?!" Sam asked.

"Because I read in Hebrews 9:27 *And it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement*:" Jimmy replied. "Since death is the appointment of God, what have I to worry about? I won't die before my time, and when it does come, I will go to be with Jesus."

"You're right there, Jimmy," said Sam "I never thought of that."

It was about thirteen months later when Uncle Henry switched on the news.

"Here is the news and this is James Johnson reading it" said the announcer. "We have good news, after exactly one year, one month, one day, and an hour from it starting, the mysterious deaths stopped. In the last 72 hours there has been no reported cases" said James Johnson. "It has been estimated that one third of the world's population has mysteriously died without any reason. We have with us in the studio Mr Sam Carver from the Royal President Hospital in Jerusalem.

Mr Carver, what do you think may have caused this strange phenomenon and why has it stopped so quickly?"

"I'm afraid that we at the Royal President Hospital have no idea why it started or finished so abruptly" Mr Carver replied. "We have been working none stop, around the clock, on the problem since it began some thirteens months ago, and we are no closer to finding the answer than we were back then."

"What sort of things have you been doing?" James Johnson asked.

"We've run every test that we could think of to try to solve the problem but we have still not discovered the cause."

"Thank you, Mr Carver, I will have to stop you there as we have run out of time."

"Thank you" said Mr Carver.

We have received some very important news from the Royal Presidential Palace in Jerusalem" said the radio announcer. "We now hand you over to the president of the UFSE and of the world, President Joshua Christian."

"Thank you, James" said the president as he began "my dear European friends and all other countries of the world. I apologise for interrupting your programmes but I do have some very good news. Two days ago, I had to send troops to find and destroy those two trouble makers Moses and Elijah once and for all. They have been causing the world, and my dear beloved people so much trouble that they left me no alterative. This was not a decision that I took lightly, but something had to be done. In the early hours of this morning Moses and Elijah were shot dead in the city of Jerusalem. Since they have caused you such hardship, I have declared a public holiday for seven days. Great celebrations are to take place all over the Earth, it is to be like another Christmas. I suggest that we all send gifts to each other to celebrate. You need no longer worry about all the trouble they caused you by bringing all kinds of plagues upon you. And because these two fanatic preaches caused so much trouble in the world, I have forbidden their bodies to be buried as a public example. Whilst the celebrations go on, live pictures of these two fanatics' bodies laying dead in the street will be transmitted on all television channels." [66]

When Jimmy heard the news, he began to cry.

"What's the matter, Jimmy?" Auntie Freda asked kindly.

"Moses and Elijah are dead" he replied as he ran to his cabin in tears.

After a few minutes Auntie Freda arrived with a cup of hot chocolate to try to cheer him up.

"Moses and Elijah are dead, they've been murdered by 'that' President Christian!" said Jimmy harshly through his tears.

"I know," said Auntie Freda kindly as she took Jimmy into her arms and gave him a hug.

"They were two of the best friends I'd ever met" said Jimmy.

"Well, Jimmy you've got another friend in Jesus" said Auntie Freda as she wiped away Jimmy's tears with her hanky "remember how the Lord got your uncle out of jail when you prayed? None of us at the time knew the Lord except you and you had enough faith for all of us."

"You're right"said Jimmy "I think I will pray."

"I'll leave you to it then"said Auntie Freda kindly as she left his cabin.

"Why did you let this, happen, Lord?" Jimmy asked through his tears as he began to pray. "You know that Moses and Elijah were two of my best friends."

It was then that he heard the Lord reply "dry your tears, Jimmy, and be at peace. The death of Moses and Elijah was foretold in My Word in Revelation 11."

Jimmy quickly looked up the chapter and began to read all about God's two witnesses, how they would be killed and how everyone would celebrate. He began to smile when he reached verses 11-12, which reads *'And after three days and a half the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which saw them. And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them, Come up here. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them'.*

It was sometime later that Auntie Freda came in with another cup of hot chocolate.

"Do you feel like coming through now?" she asked "your uncle is outside playing cricket with Sam."

"I think I will now" replied Jimmy "I fancy a game of cricket" and he went outside to join Uncle Henry and Sam.

It was about three days later when Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and the boys were listening to their favourite music programme on the radio when it was interrupted by a newsflash.

"We bring you some important but terrifying news!"said the news reader. "Moses and Elijah who were executed about three and a half days ago, are alive!"

"Yippee!" shouted Jimmy.

"Shush!" said Uncle Henry "we are trying to listen."

"They have just this minute, before the eyes of the world, stood to their feet."

"I wonder if this is on the telly" said Uncle Henry. He switched it on just in time to hear a loud voice on the televison say "Come up here."

At that point a cloud came down and seemed to somehow lift them up and take them into the sky out of every one's sight.[67]

Jimmy gave a big smile that seemed to go from ear to ear. He was so happy to see that his friends were alive again and to see that the Bible was indeed true.

"It must be the hand of God" said Auntie Freda.

"Your right there, Freda," Uncle Henry replied.

"I knew that it was going to happen" said Jimmy.

"How did you know that? Uncle Henry asked.

"You know three days ago, I ran into my cabin crying when I heard the news about Moses and Elijah, and Auntie Freda came in to comfort me?"said Jimmy.

"I remember" Uncle Henry replied.

"She suggested that I prayed about it," said Jimmy "so I did and when I started to pray the Lord told me to look at Revelation 11, and it's all right there in the Bible" said Jimmy as he showed his uncle his Bible.

"Why so it is, Jimmy" Uncle Henry replied "I didn't know that, that was in there."

Several weeks later Uncle Henry woke early. "What would boys like to do today?" he asked.

"Can we go for a boat ride?" Jimmy asked excitedly.

"It might be a bit dangerous for us to leave the safety of the cove"Uncle Henry replied.

"Can we go, please?" Sam asked longingly.

"Can't we trust the Lord to keep us safe, dear?" said Auntie Freda.

"I suppose you're right" Uncle Henry replied "I should have more faith. Besides we don't have to go to any populated areas."

"I'll go and get the breakfast sorted" said Auntie Freda. A short time later she returned with Jimmy's favourite breakfast.

"Wow, smashing" said Jimmy in surprise.

After they had all finished breakfast, Uncle Henry started the engine and Auntie Freda cast off, and soon they were underway.

"Wow," said Sam "just look how far away we are from land."

"I can't even see it" said Jimmy.

"Yes," said Uncle Henry "I thought that if we were to go just over the horizon no-one would be able to see us from land."

"But how will we be able to find our way back to the shore," Sam asked "it all looks the same to me?"

"Oo, I never thought of that, Sam!" said Uncle Henry.

"Does that mean that we are lost at sea and we'll never see land again?" Sam asked looking rather worried.

"It certainly looks that way" Uncle Henry replied.

Jimmy gave a smile, he knew that Uncle Henry was trying to get Sam going. He had remembered that the boat had a satellite navigation system.

"Oh, Henry, you are awful" said Auntie Freda with a smile.

"Sam, the boat has got a satellite navigation system, remember?" said Jimmy.

"Oh yes," replied Sam "I remember, oh uncle, you are a stinker."

"I had you going for a minute there, didn't I?" said Uncle Henry.

"I don't like to have to say this, but there's another boat in the distance" said Auntie Freda.

"I hope that is not what I think it is," said Uncle Henry "it looks remarkably like a police patrol boat."

Sure enough as the boat drew closer, Uncle Henry fears were confirmed. He said a quick prayer under his breath that they would all be kept safe from being arrested. "Quick," he said "you'd better hide our Bibles."

"Ahoy there," shouted a federal police officer "prepare to be boarded."

Uncle Henry did as he was told.

"What can I do for you?" Uncle Henry asked as the police boarded the boat.

"We are seeking out followers of Jesus of Nazareth" replied the officer. "Do you mind if we search your vessel?"

"Be my guest" Uncle Henry replied rather worriedly, but trying not to show it. "Where did you hide our Bibles?" he whispered to Auntie Freda.

"Jimmy put them inside the locker in his cabin" Auntie Freda whispered back.

"Lord, please don't let them look in there" Uncle Henry whispered in prayer.

"Have you searched in here, John?" the sergeant asked pointing at Jimmy's cabin.

"Not yet serge, I was just about too" John replied.

Uncle Henry gave a gulp.

After about five minutes the officer emerged from Jimmy's cabin "there's nothing in here serge he said.

"Well it looks like you are in the clear," said the sergeant "however, I couldn't help noticing that you do not have the new identification mark. I suggest that you get it as soon as possible otherwise you could find that you are in for a great deal of trouble. Do you have any form of identification?"

"I have my drivers licence" said Uncle Henry "I'll go and get it for you."

He returned a few minutes later and said "Freda, can you remember what I did with my jacket?"

"Sorry dear" Auntie Freda replied "it was my fault, I put it in Jimmy's locker by mistake."

"Thank you, dear" Uncle Henry replied and off he went to get his licence from the wallet he kept in his jacket pocket. As he opened Jimmy's locker all the Bibles and literature fell out on to the floor with a crash right in front of the sergeant, who was standing in the doorway.

"Oh, no," thought Uncle Henry "we're for it now." But to his surprise the sergeant didn't even bat an eyelid, it was as though he hadn't seen or heard a thing.

"What was that noise?" Sam asked.

"What was what noise?" the sergeant asked.

"I thought I heard a crashing noise like books falling on the floor" Sam replied.

"Shush, Sam" whispered Auntie Freda.

"Well I didn't hear anything" said the sergeant.

"Thank you Lord" Uncle Henry prayed under his breath."

"Did you manage to find your drivers licence?" the sergeant asked.

"Yes" said Uncle Henry handing it to the sergeant.

"Thank you" he said as he checked Uncle Henry's licence against a list that he had. "I see that you received your final call up to take the DCLXVI mark well over a year ago. How have you managed to survive without being able to buy food for all that time?"

"I'm a market gardener" Uncle Henry replied "I grow my own food."

"I see," said the sergeant giving Uncle Henry a suspicious look "the reason I asked is that the followers of Jesus have been pooling their food and sharing it out with each other."

"It's amazing what some people will do" said Uncle Henry innocently.

"Well I suggest that you take the DCLXVI mark as soon as you can" continued the sergeant. "The president is thinking of making it an arrestable offence not to take the mark. He deducts that the only reason a person will not receive the DCLXVI identification is that they must be followers of Jesus."

"That seems to be good reasoning" said Uncle Henry.

"We'll bid you good day then" said the sergeant "sorry to have troubled you."

After the police had gone everyone breathed a sigh of relief.

"Wow, that was close" said Uncle Henry.

"It certainly was, dear," said Auntie Freda "I thought for a moment there we were all going to be arrested for sure."

"So did I," said Jimmy "especially when our Bibles fell out of the locker."

"And you nearly let the cat out of the bag, Sam, when you asked what the noise was" said Uncle Henry."

"Sorry" said Sam and he started to cry.

"Don't cry Sam, it's not that bad" said Uncle Henry.

"But I nearly got us all arrested" Sam replied.

Auntie Freda went over and gave Sam a hug "don't cry" she said it's all over now, and we all

forgive you. How would you like me to make you a nice cup of hot chocolate?"

"That would be nice" said Sam.

"Can I have one too?" said Jimmy.

"You weren't meant to be listening" Auntie Freda replied.

"I think that it might be a good idea if we get the boat back to the cove" said Uncle Henry.

"Do you think that, that would be such a good idea, Henry?" Auntie Freda asked. "If we leave now, the police are bound to think we are making a run for it, and that we have something to hide."

"I suppose you're right there, Freda, I hadn't thought of that" Uncle Henry replied. "We've already been searched, so they're not going to search us again. Well if we are going to be here for some time, why don't we do a bit of fishing? We might catch something for lunch."

"Yea," said Jimmy excitedly "that sounds brill."

"That will be cool" said Sam.

"Did we bring the fishing tackle?" Jimmy asked.

"Oo, no, I never thought of that, why do we need fishing tackle?" said Uncle Henry jokingly.

"To catch the fish with," Sam replied "how are we going to catch fish without any fishing tackle?"

Uncle Henry started to laugh "I got you going again didn't I?" he said. "Of course I've got the fishing tackle, we've been living on the boat for about the past eighteen months, so we're bound to have the fishing tackle."

Uncle Henry went off to get it and he returned about five minutes later and gave a rod each to the boys and he kept one for himself. "I think you'd better have a keep net each to put your catch in" said Uncle Henry.

"I'm going to catch more fish than you" said Jimmy jokingly.

"Oh no you're not," said Sam laughingly "I'm going to catch more fish than you."

"I don't like to mention it, but remember what happened last time we went fishing" said Jimmy "I did catch more fish than you."

"That's only because you caught a tin of sardines" said Sam with a smile.

"Yea," said Jimmy " but I still caught more fish than you."

"He's got a point there, Sam" said Uncle Henry "he did catch more fish than you."

After they had been fishing for about two hours, they still hadn't caught anything. "I think that we'd better call it a day" said Uncle Henry "it doesn't look like the fish are biting today." The boys handed back their fishing rods to Uncle Henry.

"I'll go and get the keep nets" said Jimmy. As he lifted Sam's net out of the water, he gasped in amazement. "Sam, your net is full of fish" he said "it looks like you did catch more fish than me after all."

Sam came rushing back to the side of the boat "why so it is" he said "but what about yours?" They then went to look at Jimmy's net. "Mine is full as well" said Jimmy.

"So is Uncle Henry's" said Sam.

"It looks as if the Lord is looking after us," said Uncle Henry "we've got plenty of food and to spare. But I think that we'd better be getting back to the cove, it looks like there is a storm brewing from the south east."

"I saw a flash of lightning"said Jimmy.

"Yes, it does look rather threatening" said Auntie Freda "I've never seen such dark clouds."

Uncle Henry started the engine and headed the boat back to the cove at full speed.

"If you count the seconds between the lightning and the thunder, you can work out how many miles away the storm is" said Jimmy.

"Really!" said Sam "how do you work it out?"

"Well, you know that the thunder and lightning actually happen at the same time, and that light travels faster than sound?" said Jimmy.

"Yes," said Sam "I know that."

"Well, for every five seconds you count between the lightning and the thunder equals one mile" said Jimmy.

"So, if it takes five seconds to hear the thunder after the lightning then the storm is one mile away" said Sam.

"That's right" Jimmy replied.

Soon they arrived at the cove and Uncle Henry moored the boat just inside the cave like he always did.

They hadn't been there more than five minutes when there was an earthquake. The cave and jetty started to shake. "We'd better move the boat out of the cave" said Uncle Henry.

"I think it might be better if we were to stay here" said Auntie Freda "it has just begun to hail and just look at the size of the hailstones."

"Yea," said Jimmy "just look at the size of those things."

"They're certainly the biggest hailstones that I've ever seen" said Sam.

They certainly are big," said Uncle Henry " they make the boat bob up and down with the waves they are making every time one of them hits the water." [68]

It was later that day that John, Sandra, Janet and Danny arrived for the meeting.

"It's good to see you all again" said Uncle Henry.

"Would you all like a cup of tea?" Auntie Freda asked.

"That would be lovely" said Janet.

"And what about you, Danny?" said Auntie Freda.

"No thanks," he replied "I don't like tea very much."

Auntie Freda smiled "I wasn't offering you a cup of tea, I was asking you what you would like to drink" she said.

"Oh, sorry!" said Danny "I'd like a fizzy drink."

"Danny! don't forget to say please" said Janet.

"Sorry," said Danny " please may I have a fizzy drink?"

"Yes, of course you can" Auntie Freda replied.

"And what about you, John?"

"Tea will be fine, please, Freda" John replied.

"That's fine with me too" said Sandra.

"We nearly got arrested today" said Jimmy.

"Really!" said John "what happened?"

"We went out on the sea today" said Uncle Henry "and we were boarded by a police patrol, and they nearly caught us with our Bibles."

"Sam nearly gave the game away" said Jimmy.

"There's no need to keep reminding me," said Sam rather crossly "I didn't do it deliberately."

"It's all right, Sam, we know you didn't" said Auntie Freda kindly.

"Just before the police boarded the boat, Jimmy put all our Bibles inside the locker in his cabin" said Uncle Henry. "The strange thing is that the police looked into Jimmy's locker but they didn't find a thing. Even when the Bibles fell out of the locker they didn't bat an eyelid."

"The Lord must have been looking after you this afternoon" said John.

"I think you're right there" said Uncle Henry. "What did you think of today's storm?" he added.

"It was one of the worst storms I ever seen" said Sandra. "I've never seen hailstones as big as the ones we saw today."

"You know, I was reading on the news bulletin board that people were hearing voices during the storm, saying "repent for the time is at hand"" said John.

"I wonder why didn't we hear it" said Uncle Henry inquisitively.

"I suppose that is because we have already repented" John replied.

"Yes, of course" said Uncle Henry "I didn't think of that. Anyway, enough talking, I think that it might be a good idea if we were to make a move if we are going to have a meeting."

Uncle Henry started the engine, Auntie Freda cast off, and they headed into the cave in the direction of the secret cavern where they held their meetings.

After about forty minutes they arrived at the cavern.

"I think that it would be nice if we were to start by singing a few choruses" said John.

They started to sing and were really enjoying praising the Lord, but no-one had noticed that there was an open window on the boat, and that the sound of their singing was resounding all around the cavern.

After they had finished singing John said "I'd like to read from Philippians 2 and verses 5-11" and he began to read:

5 "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:

7 But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:

8 And being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a Name which is above every name:

10 That at the Name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in Heaven, of things in Earth, and things under the Earth;

11 And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

You know, it is Jesus who is Lord, and not President Christian" John continued.

No sooner had he got the words out of his mouth, when two federal police officers burst in.

"We need no further evidence then that" said one of the officers "we are placing you all under arrest."

They were all handcuffed and taken to the police patrol boat.

"I've never been on a police boat before"said Sam.

"It would have been nice under different circumstances" said Uncle Henry.

"We've been looking for people like you for a long time," said one of the officers "and it's you followers of Jesus that are causing all the trouble in the world. Didn't we search your boat earlier today?"

"That's right" Uncle Henry replied.

"Then how is it that we didn't find your Bibles?" asked the officer.

"Our Bibles fell out of the locker right in front of you" said Uncle Henry.

"Oh yes! then how come we didn't see them?!" the officer asked rather sarcastically.

"The Lord Jesus must have sent His angels to protect us and to hide them from your eyes" Uncle Henry said boldly.

"SILENCE!" shouted the police officer "no more of your heresy. There is only one god in this world, and that is President Christian."

After they had been travelling for a while and reached land, they were transferred to a police van and taken to Oaktree Garden City Police Station.

"Don't I know you?" said the custody sergeant to Uncle Henry as they went inside. "You were the one we arrested for shooting President Christian. The president will be pleased to know that we have caught you again" said the sergeant. "How did you manage to escape?"

"The Lord Jesus sent an angel to set me free" Uncle Henry replied.

"Well there will be no escaping this time"said the sergeant "President Christian is greater than your Jesus, and to make doubly certain that you don't escape again there will be an armed guard at the door of your cell at all times."

With that, he escorted them to their cells. Auntie Freda, Janet and Sandra were locked up in same cell and Uncle Henry, John, Jimmy, Sam and Danny were locked up in the cell next door.

"I've been locked up in here before" said Uncle Henry after the custody sergeant had gone. "It is the very same cell they locked me in for shooting the president."

"Did you really shoot President Christian?" Danny asked excitedly.

Uncle Henry hung his head in shame and said "I'm afraid it's true."

"But why did you shoot him?" Danny asked.

"I didn't mean to" Uncle Henry replied. "You see, it is a bit of a long story. We all came to hear President Christian here in Oaktree Garden City. He said something that upset Jimmy, and Jimmy ran up to the president and gave him a big kick. President Christian made a grab for him but he missed, and Jimmy ran out of the hall. We all ran after him, followed by the president and his aides who were intent on catching Jimmy. As we passed through the fairground, I grabbed a bow and arrow from an archery stall and fired in the direction of the president and his aides to try and slow them down. Unfortunately one of the arrows accidentally hit the president, and I was arrested and brought here, to this very cell."

"Did an angel really set you free?" Danny enquired.

"Yes," Uncle Henry replied "when I was first brought in here I was feeling very sorry for myself and when it came to the time to sleep I just kept on tossing and turning. Eventually when I did manage to get off to sleep, I was awakened in the night by someone shaking me and calling my name. I wearily opened my eyes and there standing before me was someone in white, bright, shining clothing. "Who are you?" I asked. The angel told me that his name was Shalom, and he had been sent from God to set me free in answer to Jimmy's prayer. He told me he'd been sent to be my guardian until the LORD returns. Then he said "Come follow me." Wearily I got up still half asleep and followed. The angel opened the cell door and lead me past the custody officer and out of the police station. Immediately I found myself back on my farm and standing outside the front door of my cottage, wondering how on earth I managed to get there. It was then, when I went inside, I found that Jimmy had been praying for me and that the Lord had told him that He would set me free."

"Wow," said Danny "what a story."

Just then there was a loud bang as the custody sergeant entered the custody suit and closed the door behind him.

"What; hasn't your angel come to rescue you?!" he said sarcastically. "I just came to let you know that we've been in contact with President Christian and he is very interested to hear that we have caught his killer. You'll be pleased to know that there will be no escaping this time. The president considers you far too important to let you escape again. He has sent a military armed guard to make certain that you can't escape this time," and with that he turned and left the custody suit, as he did so a soldier in full battle dress came in and stood guard at the door to their cell.

"That's a point," said Danny "why hasn't the angel protected us?"

"I don't know," Uncle Henry replied "but he did say that he would protect me until the Lord returns."

"Perhaps the Lord will return today" said Danny.

"I do hope so," Uncle Henry replied "that would be wonderful."

The next day the custody sergeant came in and said to Uncle Henry "you'll be pleased to know that you and your family will be going to Jerusalem to be tried at the highest court there is."

"I know of a higher one," Uncle Henry replied "and it is the only court where perfect justice is dealt out."

"Oh yes?!" said the custody sergeant sarcastically "and where might that be?"

"It is the Great White Throne of the Lord Jesus Christ, where every man, woman, boy and girl who knows not Christ will one day have to stand and be judged by Almighty God" said Uncle Henry.

"SILENCE!" shouted the sergeant "I want to hear no more of this heresy."

With that he first bundled Uncle Henry, Jimmy, and Sam out of their cell punching and kicking Uncle Henry as they went. The sergeant then got Auntie Freda out of her cell and took them all to where the prison van was waiting. The van was surrounded by military vehicles.

"There," said the sergeant sarcastically "you've got a military escort."

He then handcuffed them all together and pushed them into the back of the prison van, and they set off on their journey.

It didn't take long to reach the airport, and soon they were all boarding an aeroplane bound for Jerusalem.

"Wow," said Sam "we're going to fly to Jerusalem."

"It would have been nicer if we we're going there under better circumstances and we weren't handcuffed together like this" said Uncle Henry.

"Well, I'm willing to go through all this for Jesus," said Jimmy "and it's so wonderful that I will be walking on ground that the Lord Jesus walked.

"Me too," said Sam "I'm willing to go through it all for Jesus."

"Silence!" said one of the guards "we'll have no more talk of this Jesus. The next person to mention the Name of Jesus will be whipped."

With that the guard handcuffed them to their seats and plane took off.

"Look, Jimmy, we're above the clouds" said Sam.

"Yes" Jimmy replied "remember the last time we were on an aeroplane. We were all going to see Professor Wormwood."

"Yea," said Sam "didn't we have a great time?"

"I'll say we did," said Jimmy "remember when we saw that eclipse?"

"Yea," said Sam "it was really cool."

"Yes," said Uncle Henry jokingly "it did turn cool when the Sun was eclipsed."

"Oh, uncle," said Sam "you knew what I meant.

After they had been flying for about five and a half hours one of the guards said "we are now approaching Jerusalem. Don't even think of trying to escape, you'll be gunned down before you even get two metres away."

"We didn't intend to" Uncle Henry replied.

"SILENCE" shouted the guard "you will speak only when you're spoken too."

After the plane had landed, they were all taken by military escort to the Royal Presidential Palace where they were locked up in a secure unit.

"This is your home for the next few days" said the guard who had been put in charge of looking after them.

Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda and the boys were all surprised that he was so polite. He didn't seem at all like the other guards.

"Why have we been brought here and not taken straight to a prison?" Uncle Henry enquired.

"That's because at the moment all the prisons in Jerusalem are full with other people like yourselves, followers of Jesus" the guard replied. "And also the president thought that it would be easier for him to keep a closer eye on you, there's ten times the guards here than at any prison."

"How long will we be here?" Uncle Henry asked.

"From what I understand you are all to stand trial in a few days at the High Presidential Court" the guard replied.

"Who is the judge?" Auntie Freda asked.

"It will be none other than the president himself, President Christian" replied the guard.

"Why are you so nice and not nasty like those other guards?" Sam asked cheekily.

"Well in some ways I've come to sympathize with you followers of Jesus" the guard replied. "I've seen so many of you lot come and go, and I must admit it, I admire you. I've seen so many of you die for your beliefs, and I've never ever seen any one of you afraid of death, me, I'm petrified of it. Anyway enough said, I'll be just outside the door if you want anything."

"But how do you know that we won't escape?" Uncle Henry enquired.

"That's very easy," said the guard "as you will see there are bars at all the windows and there is only one exit to the unit and I will be guarding that door."

"It's quite nice here" said Auntie Freda after the guard had gone.

"It's even got a telly" said Jimmy.

"And it's even got separate bedrooms" Sam added.

"I wouldn't think that, 'that' President Christian would have us live in such luxury if he had any choice" said Uncle Henry.

"No, that's exactly what I think, Henry" Auntie Freda replied.

It was a few days later that the guard came in at dawn to bring them breakfast, covered in grievous sores.

"Whatever has happened to you" Auntie Freda enquired.

"I don't really know," the guard replied "I woke up this morning just covered in sores.[69] And I'm not the only one, everyone in the palace is covered in these painful things. There is word out that this strange phenomenon is worldwide."

After the guard had gone Uncle Henry switched on the television. "Perhaps there is something on the telly about it" he said.

"Here is the news and this is Isaiah Amos reading it" said the announcer. "For some strange

reason there seems to have been a worldwide epidemic of grievous sores, and no-one seems at the moment to know what the cause is" said Isaiah Amos. "We have with us in the studio Mr Sam Carver from the Royal President Hospital. "So, Mr Carver what do you think is the cause of this sudden outbreak of sores."

"Well at the moment we really don't know"Mr Carver replied. "We are carrying out tests but as yet we haven't found the cause. Some of my colleagues think that it may be a virus of some sort but others disagree."

"Thank you Mr Carver, I'm afraid that we will have to stop you there" said Isaiah Amos. "We have just received more terrifying news, we have just learned that the sea has turned into what appears to be coagulated blood. Everything in the sea appears to have died.[70] Some more terrifying news has just come in, very shortly after the sea turned to blood so did all rivers and streams."[71]

"The Lord certainly is pouring out His divine wrath" said Uncle Henry.

"I think that you could be right there, dear" said Auntie Freda.

It was a day or two later when Uncle Henry again turned on the television to hear the announcer say, "we are sorry to interrupt your programmes but we have some terrifying news. For some unknown reason the Sun has suddenly without warning increased in temperature.[72] Thousands of people have been admitted to hospital suffering from severe heat stroke and many others have been admitted with severe burns. One man even came into the hospital with smoke pouring from his skin." Whilst Isaiah Amos was still speaking suddenly the studio plunged into darkness. "I'm sorry ladies and gentlemen" he said "we seem to be having some difficulty with the studio lights." He then paused for a moment whilst he listened to the control room and then said "I've just received news from our technical department that there is nothing wrong with the lights. Apparently they should be working perfectly well. We'll continue at the moment with sound only" said the announcer.

"It's not just the studio that is in darkness" said Auntie Freda.

"Just look out of the window, the streets are completely black."

"Your right there, Freda" Uncle Henry replied "we seem to be about the only place in the vicinity that has any light."[73]

"Do you think that it could be another eclipse, uncle?" asked Sam.

"No, I don't think so, Sam," Uncle Henry replied "I've never seen darkness like this before. If you look out of the window, you can't see anything at all."

"I'll go and make us a cup of tea" said Auntie Freda.

"Thank you, Freda, that would be nice" said Uncle Henry.

"Well at least the Lord is looking after us" said Jimmy.

"He certainly is, Jimmy, he certainly is" said Uncle Henry.

"We have just learned that for some unknown reason the river Euphrates has dried up" continued Isaiah Amos.[74] "For the first time in history there is no water flowing down this great river."

Just then the guard came in and said "you'll be glad to know that you are to be tried tomorrow at the High Presidential Court" he said.

"At least tomorrow it will all be over" said Uncle Henry.

The next day the guard came in early "I'm afraid this is the day for your trial" he said.

"Well we're as ready as we can be" Uncle Henry replied.

The guard then took them all to a prison cell in the court where prisoners were held awaiting trial.

"Are you frightened, Jimmy?" Sam asked.

"No," said Jimmy "I'm not, I thought that I would be at this point in time but I'm not. The Lord is with me and I feel perfectly at peace."

"Well I am" said Sam.

"There's nothing to fear" said Jimmy kindly "whatever the outcome, the Lord Jesus is with us and one way or another we will be seeing Him shortly. I'm longing to meet Jesus."

"So am I" Sam replied.

Shortly the door to the prison cell opened and they were all escorted to the main courtroom.

"Well this is it" whispered Sam.

"Don't worry, Sam, Jesus is with us" Jimmy whispered back.

Just then the court usher said "all rise for the president of the UFSE and the rest of the World."

The president entered the courtroom and sat down.

"Mr president, we have before us the accused, for the crimes of being followers of Jesus of Nazareth, and also for assault, and murder of the president of the UFSE and the rest of the World" said the court usher .

President Christian glared at them all and said "how do you plead, guilty or not guilty."

Uncle Henry stood to his feet and said "to the crimes of assault, and murder we plead, not guilty. Jimmy was only a young boy at the time of the so-called assault and I certainly did not intend to kill anyone, but for the crimes of being followers of Jesus the Son of God we all plead guilty. Jesus is the most wonderful person that this world has ever known and I can't see why you have to make it a crime to follow Him."

"So you admit your crimes" said the president "you know, of course, that being a follower of Jesus carries the death penalty. The fact that you have admitted that you are all followers of Jesus has already condemned you all to death.

Do you admit that you fired an arrow at me?"

"Yes," said Uncle Henry "but I didn't intend to hit you with it. I was only trying to protect my nephew."

"Just answer the question" retorted the president.

"Did you, or did you not, fire an arrow at me?"

"Yes," replied Uncle Henry "I did."

"And what about you, young man" said the president as he turned and looked straight at Jimmy?"

"Did you, or did you not, kick me on the ankle?"

"Yes I did!"said Jimmy boldly "and you jolly well deserved it too!"

With that the president's face grew red with anger.

"Do you realise who you are talking to, I am your lord and master?!" replied the president. "**I**! and **I alone**, have the power to have you executed or set free!"

"The only power you have over me, is what you have been allowed to have by the One who is above all authority, and that is 'The Lord Jesus Christ'" Jimmy replied.

The president's face grew even redder with rage "how dare you speak to your ruler like that!" he said loudly.

Jimmy made no reply.

The president then turned to Auntie Freda and Sam "and how do you both plead?" he asked.

"For the crime of being a follower of Jesus I plead guilty" Auntie Freda replied.

"And I also plead guilty," said Sam "Jesus is the most wonderful person I've ever met."

"**SILENCE**!" shouted the president. "We'll have no more of this talk of this Jesus of Nazareth. By your own mouths you have condemned yourselves to death. However, as you know, I am a peace-loving man and if you will bow the knee before me and worship and serve me, I might be persuaded to let you all live. How about you Henry Greene, will you do this?"

"Mr president, neither I, nor any of my family will ever bow the knee to you, nor will any of us worship and serve you!" Uncle Henry replied boldly. "It is written in the Bible 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve'. It also states in the Bible that at the Name of Jesus every knee will one day have to bow to the Lordship of Christ [75] and anyone not willing to do so now, will, one day be made to do so, and that includes you, Mr president."

With that the president's face grew even redder than ever with rage. Auntie Freda thought that he looked as though he was going to have a heart attack.

"**I will never!** bow the knee to your Jesus!" he shouted at the top of his voice. "I've offered you mercy and you have turned it down. By your own mouths you have condemned yourselves. This court finds you all guilty as charged. Henry Greene, you have been found guilty of blasphemy against the president of the World and also murder of the president. You have been found guilty of being a follower of Jesus of Nazareth and are therefore an enemy of the state. Freda Greene, and Samuel Johnson you have both been found guilty of being followers of Jesus of Nazareth and are therefore enemies of the state. You are also guilty of harbouring a murderer. Jimmy Greene you have been found guilty of assaulting the president of the World. You have been found guilty of being a follower of Jesus of Nazareth and you are therefore an enemy of the state. You too are guilty of harbouring a murderer, and you may have thought that I'd forgotten, but you told me at the time of my assault that Moses and Elijah were your friends. This makes you guilty of being friends with enemies of the state.

I will now pass sentence. You will all be taken from here to prison. There you will be flogged each day until the day of your execution. Normally the sentence for being a follower of Jesus of Nazareth is execution by beheading, but because of the severity of your crimes, and seeing that you think so highly of your Jesus, you can be crucified like Him. On the day of execution you will be taken to Golgotha's Hill where you will all be crucified on crosses of your own."

"Wow!" exclaimed Jimmy as they left the court "Lord, I'm not worthy to be crucified on the same spot that you were."

They were all taken from the court to prison where they were all locked in the same cell.

"I'm not looking forward to being flogged or crucified" said Sam.

"Neither am I," Jimmy replied "but I can't help thinking 'why should the Lord count me worthy to die the same type of death as His and die in the same place that He died."

"I suppose, that, to some extent you're right, Jimmy," said Sam "in a sort of way it is an honour."

"Why don't we have a time of prayer?" suggested Uncle Henry.

"That sounds a good idea, Henry" Auntie Freda replied.

"We could also have a read from the Bible" suggested Jimmy.

"And how do you think that we are going to do that, with no Bible?" said Uncle Henry.

"Who said that we don't have a Bible?" Jimmy replied pulling a copy of the New Testament out of his pocket.

"However did you manage to smuggle that in here?" Uncle Henry asked in amazement.

"I just asked the Lord to help me get it in here and He did" said Jimmy.

"Well done Jimmy" said Uncle Henry.

"It's not me you should be thankful to" Jimmy replied "it's the Lord, He helped me get it past

all the prison guards."

"Yes of course, Jimmy, you're right there," said Uncle Henry "shall we pray?"

Everyone bowed their heads and Uncle Henry began to pray. "Lord," he said "Jimmy is right we are not worthy to suffer and die the way that you did for us. Nor are we worthy to die in the same place as you did. Lord we thank you for the privilege of doing so. We also thank you for allowing us to have your precious Word. Please be with us now as we read your Word. In Your Name we pray. Amen. I feel that we should read from the book of Romans chapter 8 and verses 16-18.

> *16 'The Spirit Himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:*
>
> *17 And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heir with Christ; if so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together.*
>
> *18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.'"*

"Wow, that's beautiful" said Auntie Freda.

"It certainly is," said Jimmy "and it won't be long now before we all see Jesus face to face."

"I can hardly wait!" said Sam.

"I don't understand why, but, I know that I should be feeling very upset and worried but somehow I'm not"said Jimmy.

"It's the Lord's sustaining grace" Uncle Henry replied.

"What does that mean?" Jimmy asked.

"Well, Jimmy, what it means is that the Lord is upholding you" said Uncle Henry.

"I think that He is upholding us all" said Auntie Freda.

The next day they were each taken out in turn to be flogged. Auntie Freda was first, followed by Uncle Henry and then it was the boys' turn.

"I'm not looking forward to this" said Jimmy.

"Neither am I" said Sam.

They were taken outside and stripped to the waste and tied to a post with their hands above their heads.

"Aaagh" Jimmy screamed in pain as the first lash struck his back followed by a second and then a third.

"Jesus, forgive them" he said in agony.

"I'll teach you to bring 'that' Jesus into the situation" said the prison guard, and he whipped Jimmy even harder.

"Hold on in there, Jimmy" said Sam wreathing with pain."

"I'll teach you to talk to your friend whilst you're being flogged" said the other guard and he whipped Sam even harder.

After they'd been whipped for about ten minutes the guards lead them back to their cell.

"I don't know if I can take this every day" said Jimmy with tears in his eyes "I've never felt such pain in my life."

"Neither have I" Sam replied.

Finally they got back to their cell.

"Am I glad that, that is over with" said Jimmy "I don't think that I can take another day of this."

"You will, with the Lord's help" Uncle Henry replied with a smile. "The Lord is more than able to help you."

"Why don't we have a time of prayer?" said Auntie Freda kindly.

"That sounds a good idea" Uncle Henry replied. "Dear Heavenly Father" he began "you know what we are all going through and the amount of pain we are enduring for the cause of Christ. Please would you give us the strength the to endure it all for Him in Jesus Name we pray. Amen."

"That was a lovely prayer?" said Auntie Freda.

"Thank you, uncle" said Jimmy.

"Yes, thank you" said Sam.

The next day just as before Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda were taken out first to be whipped, then next it was the boys' turn.

"I'm not looking forward to this" said Sam.

"It's not worrying me like it did yesterday" replied Jimmy "the Lord is upholding me."

As the guard started whipping the boys, the pain didn't seem half as bad as it had the day before.

After about ten minutes the boys were taken back to their cell.

"I don't know about you, Jimmy,"said Sam "but did you think that the guards didn't seem to be whipping us as hard as yesterday?"

"Yes," Jimmy replied "but I don't think that it had anything to do with how hard the guards were hitting us, I think that it was the Lord who was taking away some of the pain."

"I think that you're right there, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry "when your aunt and I were being whipped it wasn't quiet so painful for us either."

"It must have been your prayer yesterday that did it" said Auntie Freda.

"I think you're right there, Freda" Uncle Henry replied.

Early the next day the guards arrived as usual for the regular whipping, but this time instead of Uncle Henry, and Auntie Freda being beaten first followed by the boys, they were all chained together and handcuffed to one of the guards and were taken out for their daily beatings.

"It's a nice day for a beating" said one of the guards sarcastically.

No sooner had he got those words out of his mouth, when without warning, there was a sudden flash of lightning, a loud thunder clap and a violent earthquake, mightier than the Earth had ever had before. The quake was so mighty the every wall in the whole land fell to the ground including all the prison walls.

"It's a good job that we were all chained together," said the guard "otherwise you might have all escaped. I guess we'll have to put off your beatings until we get this mess sorted out."

Suddenly without warning it began to hail with hailstones the size of great rocks, the size of which had never been seen before, with each stone weighing about 100 pounds.[76]

"Quick, said the guard "we'd better take shelter in this armoured vehicle."

Everyone hurriedly climbed into the vehicle. As the hailstones hit, it sounded like they would come through the roof any minute. As it was they dented the roof very badly.

After the storm was over the soldiers set up some tents and hammered strong posts into the grounds to chain the prisoners to.

"You'll be glad to hear that you won't be being whipped today" said one of the guards later on that day. "Everyone is so upset with the news."

"News, what news?" Uncle Henry enquired.

"The news about Babylon" the guard replied.

"Babylon, what about Babylon?" Uncle Henry asked.

"You've not heard the news?!" the guard exclaimed.

"Well it is a bit difficult hearing any news locked up in prison" Uncle Henry commented.

"Of course you won't have heard the news" said the guard "I should have known better. Babylon has been split into three parts and has been burnt to the ground, Babylon that great city is in ruins. You'd better come with me, President Christian has declared a week of mourning, and wants everyone including prisoners to hear about the news and take part in the week of mourning".

The guard took them to the prison canteen tent where all the other prisoners were listening to the radio.

"Here is the news with Isaiah Amos" said the announcer. "We bring you some very important news" said Isaiah Amos almost in tears. "In the early hours of the morning a fire ball was seen to come from the sky and consume the great city of Babylon.[77] This great city that was rebuilt just a few years ago and has become the world capital of commerce and finance is in ruins. There is not a building in the great city that has not either been destroyed by this mornings great earthquake or burnt to the ground. President Christian has declared a week of mourning over the loss of Babylon. Men and women of great standing have been seen in the street in tears. We take you over to our on the spot reporter Joshua Smith."

"Thank you Isaiah" said Joshua. "We have with us an eye witness as to what happened, Mr David Samuel. So what happened Mr Samuel?" Joshua Smith asked.

"Well, as I was approaching the city in my car, there was this massive earthquake. It was so bad that I had to stop the car otherwise it might have thrown me clear off the road. As I watched I saw the city was torn in three parts by the earthquake and then I saw something come down out of the sky" replied Mr Samuel trying to hold back the tears.

"What was it you saw?" Joshua asked.

"Oh it was terrible," sobbed Mr Samuel "this, this, this," he stammered "of what I can only describe as a ball of fire just, oh it's so terrible" at that point he broke off what he was saying and really began to sob, "I'm sorry" he sobbed.

"That's all right" said Joshua "just take a moment."

After Mr Samuel had gathered himself together, Joshua again asked what had happened.

"I'm sorry about that, I just couldn't contain myself" said Mr Samuel.

"That's all right" said Joshua "I'm sure that our listeners understand."

"Well as I was driving towards the city and as I approached it, there was this great earthquake and I saw in the distance the city as it was torn in to three parts and what I can only describe as a ball of fire rain down out of the sky and burn up the city" said Mr Samuel. "I was absolutely devastated."[78]

"Thank you Mr Samuel, but I'm afraid that I will have to stop you there because we have run out of time," said Joshua "we now hand you back to the studio."

"Thank you Joshua, that was Joshua Smith reporting from just outside Babylon" said Isaiah Amos "sad news it is indeed. I'm sure that this is a day that the world will not easily forget.

We have received news that armies are gathering from all over the World in rebellion against President Christian and will shortly be descending on Jerusalem.[79] The president is preparing

the UFSE for war. An army from the north attacked Israel in the early hours of this morning at about the time of the earthquake.

News has just come in that the earthquake was not just local to Israel but was a worldwide quake, every island has apparently sunk and also mountains have apparently been flattened."[78] I say again that President Christian has declared a week of mourning over the loss of Babylon.

After they had all been taken back to their prison tent Uncle Henry said "well I for one, won't be mourning over the loss of Babylon. You'd think that President Christian would be more concerned about the lives lost in the earthquake and hailstorm than the loss of Babylon. From what I've heard about it, it was a wicked city and I don't think that it would be a good idea if any of us mourn over it either. I certainly don't intend mourning for such a wicked place."

"I agree with you entirely, dear" Auntie Freda replied.

"Neither will me or Sam" said Jimmy.

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE RETURN OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

After the week of mourning, one of the prison guards came in and said sarcastically "I've got some good news and some bad news. The good news is that you will not be being taken out anymore to be whipped. The bad news is that you are to be crucified tomorrow. President Christian wants you out of the way before he starts to fight the war."

The next morning the Sun failed to rise. The sky was as dark as the night, long after the time of Sunrise.

"It looks as if your God has forsaken you!" said one of the two guards as they brought in breakfast."

"I wouldn't joke about it if I were you, Isaiah" said the other "it scares me half to death."

"Speaking of which," said Isaiah "today is the day of your execution, and this is your last meal."

"I'm not afraid," Jimmy said, confidently, "today is the day when I will meet my Jesus face to face in Heaven."

"You followers of Jesus, I just don't understand you," said Isaiah "if it were me, I'd be petrified of dying. Oh, and by the way, President Christian has sent you a radio so you can hear all the news about your forth coming execution. You'll also be pleased to know that you are all to be on television. Your execution is going to be televised."

"What a nice man," said Uncle Henry sarcastically after the guards had gone "I wonder who rattled his cage?"

"Uncle, why do you think that the Sun hasn't risen today?" Jimmy asked.

"I don't know," Uncle Henry replied "it's not only the Sun that hasn't risen, there is no moon either. With the phase that the moon is at the moment, it should be visible at this time of the morning."[80]

"What was that noise," said Sam "it sounded like gunfire."

"It may well be, Sam," said Uncle Henry "President Christian has been preparing for war all week."

"Why don't we listen to the radio and see if there's anything on the news about it?" Auntie Freda suggested.

"The rebellion is far greater than anything President Christian had originally thought" said the radio announcer as Uncle Henry switched on the radio. "It seems like world war three has broken out. There are armies gathered for battle in the valley of Megiddo from every nation of the World. One army is heading for Jerusalem for battle.[81]

Today on Golgotha's Hill, Henry, Freda, and Jimmy Greene along with Samuel Johnson are to be crucified. The event is to be televised and beamed via satellite around the world."

With that Uncle Henry switched off the radio. "I don't think we need listen to that news" he said. "I think it might be a better if we have a time of prayer."

Uncle Henry began to pray, "Dear Heavenly Father. We thank you for the wonderful times we've all had together. How we've shared the good times and the bad. I thank you for the

wonderful wife you gave me, and for Jimmy, and for Sam. Lord, in spite of the fact that Freda and I never had a family of our own, I've loved the boys as though they were my own children, and I'm sure that Freda has too. Lord, we thank you that in a matter of hours from now we are all going to meet you face to face around your throne, and sing your praises and that of the Lamb. Lord, we love You and we look forward to seeing You face to face in Heaven. Lord, we love You. In Jesus Name. Amen."

"That was a beautiful prayer" said Auntie Freda.

Just then the prison guards burst in with a military escort.

"The president wants you executed and out of the way as quickly as possible" said one of the guards.

"Why, is he frightened of losing the war, and us being set free?" said Uncle Henry "I'm surprised he can spare you."

"Speak when you are spoken to" said one of the guards as he hit Uncle Henry in the face with a rifle butt.

They were then all lead out of the prison and bundled into a prison van and taken up to Golgotha's Hill where their executioners were waiting. There on the ground were laid four crosses. One of the executioners said "we've been given instructions to execute the boys first to make you adults suffer all the more." With that he grabbed hold of Jimmy and laid him on his cross which lay on the ground. Whilst two of the guards held Jimmy down another two held one of Jimmy's hands to the cross, the executioner took the hammer and drove a nail right thought it.

"**Aaagh!**" screamed Jimmy in agony. They then did the same with his other hand, then they nailed his feet to the cross. Auntie Freda, Uncle Henry, and Sam were made to look on whilst they then raised the cross and dropped it into its socket.

"**Aaagh!**" Jimmy screamed even louder as the whole weight of his body bore down on the nails.

Then it was Sam's turn, and once again Auntie Freda and Uncle Henry were made to watch as Sam was nailed to the cross. Uncle Henry was then made to watch whilst his beloved wife of many years was also crucified, until it finally became his turn.

"You trusted in Jesus of Nazareth, now let's see if He can set you free!" one of the guards taunted.

"Yea! when He was crucified He couldn't even save Himself," taunted another "so how do you think that He can help you now?!"

All Jimmy could manage to say because of the pain was "Lord Jesus I love you, Lord I love you."

"Their Jesus couldn't set them free if He tried!" taunted yet another of the guards.

Just then there was a great meteor shower, and everyone looked skyward to watch, then there appeared in the sky the sign of the Son of Man.

Suddenly, without warning, there was the loud trumpet blast, and the sky was emblazoned with light, brighter than the noonday Sun, and there for all to see, riding on a white horse, was the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory, [82]followed by the armies of Heaven. His eyes were as a flame of fire and on His head were many crowns, and He had on His vesture and on His thigh a name written, 'KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS!'

When those who were mocking saw the Lord, they were aghast, and cried out for mercy but it was too late. They had all received the mark of the beast and were beyond redemption.

An angel cried in a loud voice saying to the fowls that fly "come and gather yourselves together

for the supper of the Great God. That you may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men both free and bond, both small and great.

On seeing the sight of the Lord in all His glory and Might, President Christian rallied together his troops and joined forces with all the other armies of the world to do battle against the Lord Himself. But before one shot could be fired, the Lord spoke the word, and all who opposed Him fell dead at His feet. When President Christian, who had said at the trial of Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda and the boys "I will never bow the knee to Jesus" saw that the battle was now lost, found himself on his knees before the King of Glory trembling with fear.

An angel then came and grabbed hold of Joshua Christian along with Father Wright, who had deceived the World and cast them both alive into the lake of fire and brimstone (Hell or Gehenna).[83]

Another angel took hold of the Devil who had deceived the world and bound him with a great chain and cast him into a bottomless pit for a thousand years.[84]

As the Lord's feet touched the Mount of Olive's there was a great earthquake and Jerusalem was divided in two. Half the mountain moved northwards and half moved in a southerly direction forming a great valley [85]

After dealing with the wicked, the Lord made His way to Golgotha's Hill where Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda and the boys were.

They didn't know how, but to their amazement, when the Lord returned to Earth, they found themselves no longer on their crosses, but were back on the ground.

"I've been healed of my wounds" said Jimmy in amazement.

"So have I," said Sam "Jimmy, your shining!"

"Why, so I am!" Jimmy replied "so are you Sam, in fact we all are."

"That's right," said Uncle Henry "we've received our resurrection bodies."[86]

Whilst they were still in discussion, the Lord reached Golgotha's Hill. Jimmy was the first to see Him, and ran over to the Lord and fell to the ground prostrate before Him.

"Oh, my Lord, I do love you!" he said reverently with tears in his eyes.

The Lord reached down and gently took Jimmy by the hand and lifted him up and said tenderly "Jimmy, my child, I love you." His voice was so tender and full of love.

When Jimmy looked straight into the eyes of Jesus, and the Lord spoke to him, he saw and felt such love that he'd never ever seen or felt before in his entire life.

When Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, and Sam saw the Lord they too fell prostrate to the ground before Him. The Lord tenderly and lovingly lifted each one of them to their feet. Then He said "you've seen where I died for you, now I'd like to show you where I prayed before I was betrayed and arrested."

The Lord then led them to the garden of Gethsemane and showed them where He had prayed for them.

As they turned to leave, Sam noticed three people sitting on a seat, two, of whom he recognised.

"It's my mum and dad!" he said with a gleam in his eye, and he ran over to them and gave them both a big hug.

"It's lovely to see you again, son" said his dad.

"My how you've grown," said his mum "the last time I saw you, you were only a boy of eight, and how old are you now?"

"I'm fifteen" Sam replied.

"And who's been looking after you all this time?" Sam's dad asked.

"He's been staying with Jimmy, Freda, myself" said Uncle Henry.

"You don't know me, Sam," said the young man who was seated with Sam's mum and dad "but I'm your brother Peter. Mum had an abortion due to complications before you were born, if she hadn't, she would have died. Ever since the Rapture took place and mum and dad came to Heaven and they told me all about you, I've been longing to meet you. Peter and Sam gave each other a big hug. Sam turned to Jimmy and said with a smile that went from ear to ear "I've got a brother, a real brother."

Jimmy turned and looked wistfully at the Lord.

"Yes, Jimmy, your mum and dad are here too!" the Lord said kindly. He then took Jimmy, Uncle Henry, and Auntie Freda to where Jimmy's mum and dad were seated on another seat in the garden. "I will have to go now," the Lord said kindly "I have other work to do," He then turned and left the garden.

"**Jimmy!**" his mum shouted holding her arms open wide for a hug when she saw him. Jimmy ran straight into her arms.

"It's so great to see you again, Jimmy," said his dad also holding his arms open wide for a hug."

"I've missed you so much" said Jimmy "the night that you were taken at the Rapture I thought that I would never see you again, I was so very upset, I just sobbed, and sobbed, and sobbed."

"Ah!" said Jimmy's dad with compassion "but we're here now, all together again as one happy family.

Jimmy's dad turned to Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda and said "it's great to see you both again. How did you all come to know the Lord?"

"Well, we came to know the Lord through a Jewish evangelist called Abraham Isaacs," said Auntie Freda "and Jimmy came to know the Lord through the witness of Moses and Elijah."

"Yes, they did tell us about Jimmy" his dad replied.

"You've met Moses and Elijah?" said Jimmy excitedly.

"Yes, that's right" his dad replied "when they left Earth, the Lord called them home. Your mum and I have been sharing Heaven with them."

"How did you both come to know the Lord," Jimmy asked "was it through that meeting you went to just before the Rapture?"

"Yes, that's right Jimmy, we did" his dad replied. "The amazing thing was that John Calvin Smith was preaching about the return of the Lord. He asked "if the Lord were to return right this minute would you be ready? Are you sure that you would go to Heaven or would you be left behind when the Rapture takes place?" Both your mum and I realised that we weren't ready and when the appeal was made at the end of the meeting for us to make a decision for Christ, both your mum and I walked forward. Later as we were leaving the hall we heard a fanfare and we both thought that it was the musicians starting to play again, when before we knew what was happening we found ourselves walking in the sky, and there before us was the Lord in all His glory. He said "Come you blessed of My Father and inherit the kingdom prepared for you before the foundation of the Earth" and within seconds we found ourselves in Heaven."

"What's Heaven like?" Jimmy asked.

"It is indescribable, it's the most wonderful, and the most beautiful place that I've ever seen" his dad replied. "There is no sorrow, sickness, pain, or death there. There is no sin there, and there are streets paved with gold, but the most wonderful thing is that it is the dwelling place of God, and Heaven is full of the Glory of God.

Why don't we all have a walk around the garden?"

"That sounds a good idea" Uncle Henry replied. "Isn't the Lord so wonderful?!" he said as they set off on their walk.

"He certainly is" Jimmy's dad replied.

"It's so peaceful here in the garden" said Uncle Henry.

"That's probably because the Lord has returned" said Jimmy.

"I think that your right there, Jimmy" said Uncle Henry.

They hadn't been walking for long when they met two young men walking towards them.

"Don't I know one of these men? Uncle Henry asked.

"You should do," Jimmy's dad replied "it's our dad."

"But he looks so young" said Uncle Henry.

"You mean this is my grandad?!" exclaimed Jimmy excitedly.

"That right," said Jimmy's dad "it certainly is, this is Jim Greene the first."

"Grandad!" said Jimmy as he threw himself into his grandad's arms.

"It's lovely to meet you at last Jimmy," said his grandad "your dad's told me all about you, and what a fine lad you are and now at last we meet."

"It's lovely to see you again dad," said Uncle Henry.

"And it's great to see you again son" said his dad.

"How did you come to know the Lord? Uncle Henry asked"

"Well, you know when I was taken ill, and taken into hospital"

"I remember" said Uncle Henry "we all were very worried about you."

"The night just before I died, I was slipping in and out of consciousness" his dad replied. "Whilst I was unconscious, a visiting Salvation Army Officer came over to pray for me, as she did so I regained consciousness and I told her how afraid I was of dying. She told me how much Jesus loved me, and that He had given His life for me on the cross to pay for my sin, and that if I took Jesus for my Saviour He would forgive me and give me a home in Heaven. She then read from John 11:25,26 where Jesus said "*I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die.*""

"But grandad, you did die!" Jimmy interrupted.

"I know that, son," his grandad replied "but Jesus was not speaking of physical death, He was speaking of spiritual death. Neither was He speaking of mere head belief, that is, if anyone believes that Jesus exists, then everything would be all right. No! what Jesus was saying was that if anyone puts their trust in Him for salvation they will not die spiritually and go to Hell but that they will go to Heaven."

"Oh, I see" said Jimmy.

"Anyway, to get back to the story" said his grandad. "The lady then told me how I could be saved and she led me in the sinner's prayer for salvation. Shortly after she had gone, I fell asleep and when I awoke I found myself in a large mansion in Heaven and there standing before me was the Lord in all His Glory. He smiled at me and then He said to me in a tender voice "welcome home, Jim.""

"What about grandma, did she make it to Heaven?" Jimmy asked.

Jimmy's grandad shook his head sadly and said "no son, I'm afraid she didn't, but your Auntie Freda's mum and dad did. They both had a death bed repentance like myself.

With that Auntie Freda's face lit up with joy. "That's wonderful news" she said "I was hoping that they got saved before they died, but I didn't think that they had."

"I'll take you to them later" said Jimmy's grandad.

Just then the young man at grandad's side spoke.

"Hello Jimmy, I'm your brother Timothy. Mum had a miscarriage before you were born, and I'm your elder brother.

Jimmy turned and looked at Timothy. "Wow," he said "I've got a brother, a real brother!" and he and Timothy gave each other a hug.

The next day Jimmy and Timothy met up with Sam and Peter. "You'll never guess what?" said Sam excitedly.

"What's that?" Jimmy replied.

"The Lord came back to the garden yesterday and asked me if I would read the news for Him" said Sam.[87]

"And what did you reply?" Jimmy asked.

"Well," said Sam "when the Lord asked me, my first reply was to say that I'm only fifteen, but the Lord looked straight at me with love in His eyes and said kindly "Sam, I love you and your age doesn't matter, will you do it for me?" I said "yes my Lord, of course I will."

"Wow," said Jimmy "what a privilege. Instead of James Johnson reading the news, it will be Samuel Johnson. When will you be reading it?"

"I should be reading today's evening news" said Sam.

"You've not met my brother, have you?" Jimmy asked.

"Well," said Sam "this is a surprise, you've got a brother too."

"I'd better introduce you" said Jimmy. "Sam, this is my brother Timothy, and Timothy this is my best friend Sam and his brother Peter."

"I'm please to meet you" said Sam.

"And I'm pleased to meet you too" said Timothy.

"Both Jimmy and I wanted a brother," said Sam "and when the Lord returned and I found out that I really did have one I was really thrilled."

"So was I," said Jimmy "so was I."

"I'm really glad that I came to know the Lord" said Sam.

"Me too," said Jimmy "just look what we'd have missed out on if we hadn't."

"Perhaps, you, Timothy, along with , your mum and dad, and your Aunt and Uncle would like to come and watch me read the news?" said Sam.

"That will be great" said Jimmy "I've always wanted to visit a television studio."

That evening they all arrived at the studio.

"Are you nervous, Sam?" Jimmy asked.

"I am a little," Sam replied "but I would be even more nervous if the Lord hadn't asked me to read the news, it's really Him that I'm doing it for."

"I know what you mean" said Jimmy "I think I'd be just the same."

Eventually the time came for Sam to read the news, he and the others were all lead into the studio.

"Wow," commented Jimmy "I didn't realise that the studio was so big. The walls are not where they appear to be on the telly."

"That's right, son," Jimmy's dad replied "it's scenery, and as you'll see if you walk around the back it's got a wooden frame and is propped up at the back."

Sam was lead over to a large desk and was seated in the chair behind it.

"Now, Sam," said the producer "you will need to look at the camera with the red light on top, that's the one which is live. You'll also see on the front of each camera what is known as the

autocue from which you can read your script."

The producer then gave Sam a copy of the script on paper for him to look over before the news started.

The time gradually passed and soon it was time for the news. The producer shouted "quiet in the studio please" he then began to count down "five, four, three, two, one. The music began and the titles began to roll and Sam began to read. "Here is the news, and this is Samuel Johnson reading it. After the Lord Jesus Christ returned to the Earth yesterday, He took His seat in His rightful place in the temple in Jerusalem. From there He is to reign on Earth for one thousand years. The Lord has set His commandments before you.[88] "Thus, says the Lord:

1. "I am the Lord your God, you shall have no other gods before me.

2. You shall not make any idol nor shall you bow down and worship them, for I the Lord am a jealous God punishing the sins of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of them that hate me, and showing mercy to thousands that love me and keep My commandments.

3. You shall not take the Name of the Lord your God in vain for the Lord will not hold anyone guiltless who takes His Name in vain.

4. Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days you shall labour and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Lord's day and in it you shall do no work. For in six days the Lord made Heaven and Earth, and rested on the seventh and wherefore He blest it and made it holy.

5. Honour your father and mother.

6. You shall not commit murder.

7. You shall not commit immoral sexual acts.

8. You shall not steal.

9. You shall not bear false witness.

10. You shall not covet anything that belongs to someone else."

These commandments can be found in Exodus 20:1-17 and Deuteronomy 5:6-21

Thus, says the Lord: "behold I make all things new. There shall be peace and righteousness on Earth for the next thousand years. All workers of iniquity will be immediately punished but if they turn in genuine repentance they will be forgiven.

The third world debt has now been cancelled. There will no longer be any starving people in the world.

For years I have provided enough food to feed all of the world's billions, but due to man's greed and inhumanity, billions of people have gone to bed hungry, this will no longer be

tolerated."

Great celebrations are being prepared throughout the Earth for the marriage supper of the Lamb."

When Sam had finish reading the news they all congratulated him on how well he had done.

"Come, to the marriage supper of the lamb" said the Lord "who had just come into the studio to thank Sam for reading the news.

When they left the studio the Lord lead them to where the great feast was to take place. There before them was the biggest banqueting table that they had ever seen.

"Wow," said Sam "I've never seen anything like it.

"Its brill," commented Jimmy.

The festivities began with all singing praises to the Lamb of God, The Lord Jesus Christ. There were great celebrations throughout the entire world. The Lord at last had come to reign in righteousness. For the next thousand years the aging process was slowed down so much that a child would still be a child at a hundred years of age.[89] There was peace on Earth, it was so peaceful and tranquil all the animals were at peace with one another, no wild beasts ever attacked another. It was so safe that even a wolf and a lamb would eat together and the lions eat straw like an ox. It was even safe for a child to play among them.[90] All hunger and starvation had been eradicated. No-one ever went to bed hungry. There was perfect justice for everyone. There was love and kindness throughout the entire Earth. Even the birds singing in the trees sounded even more beautiful than usual.

The years rolled by and eventually the thousand years of Christ's reign on Earth drew to its close.

The Lord spoke the word and all of those who had put the trust in the Saviour in old testament times were raised from the dead along with those who lost their lives during the Tribulation [91]

The Lord called all those who knew Him to give an account of how they had lived for Him.

Eventually it came to Jimmy's turn to be judged at the judgement seat of Christ.[92] Jimmy nervously entered the temple where the Lord was seated on His throne.

"Jimmy, my child I love you," the Lord said kindly "there's no need to be nervous."

With those words all Jimmy's nervousness left him.

Jimmy saw his life on Earth projected onto a screen. "Lord why is there no record of my life from birth to the age of eleven?"Jimmy enquired.

The Lord smiled and said kindy "my child the things you did from birth to the age of eleven have all been erased from the record because when you were eleven, you accepted Me as your Saviour. Jimmy listened and watched the screen as the record of his life unfolded. He saw himself talking in the cafe with Moses and Elijah and he saw himself inviting the Lord into his life. "Wow," said Jimmy "I'll never forget that day as long as I live. That was the best day of my life." Jimmy then saw himself as he left the cafe and Auntie Freda meeting him outside, and he saw himself losing his temper because no-one would believe that he had just talked with Moses and Elijah. He saw his trial for being a follower of Jesus and how he stood up for the Lord and how he was willing to die for the Lord Jesus and saw himself being whipped and crucified.

"Because you stood up for Me and were willing to give your life for Me I will make you a ruler in My new kingdom" said the Lord with a smile.

However, you did lose your temper a few times and because of this I will not be able to give you a greater reward than this.

After Jimmy had been judged it was Auntie Freda's turn followed by Uncle Henry.

When all those who knew Christ had been judged, an angel loosed Satan from his prison in the bottomless pit and he went out to deceive the nations that are in the four quarters of the Earth to gather them to battle against the Lord: their number was as the sands of the sea. These were the children of those had come through the Tribulation, and Satan had deceived and they had not accepted Christ as their Saviour and Lord.[93] They encompassed the beloved city Jerusalem, to make war with God's children, but fire came down from heaven and devoured all the armies and Satan was then taken and cast into the lake of fire.

The Lord then spoke the word and the remainder of the dead were raised to life in the second resurrection and there standing before the Lord was every, man, woman, boy and girl from every tribe and nation and every religion of the world that had ever lived from the very creation to the Day of Judgement. These were they who had not put their trust in the Saviour for their salvation.

The Lord then spoke again, and there was a great noise, and the very elements of the Earth melted, and it was burned up, and the entire universe disappeared leaving those who had just been raised from the dead, along with those who were still alive and knew not Christ in empty space.[94] There before them was a Great White Throne and seated on it was The Lord Jesus Christ in all His Glory and Splendour, and there they stood in fear and trembling before Him that sat on the Great White Throne.[95] The books were opened which contained the record of everyone's entire life whilst they were on Earth. Another book was also opened which is called the Book of Life. This book was there to prove to the people at the judgement that their names were not in it.

The first person to be judged was called for judgement and the record was read out. "Oswald Peterson" said the Lord "you stand here guilty before me, of theft, lying, cheating, murder, adultery, coveting, but most of all of rejecting me."

"But Lord" said Oswald bowing down low before The Great White Throne "there must be some mistake? I've lived a good life, I've given money to charities, I've given money to help the poor and needy, and there's never been a Sunday that I haven't been in church, so how could I have rejected you."

The Lord said to the angel on His right "show Oswald the Book of Life." The angel did as he was commanded and Oswald saw that where his name could have been, it was missing. "There is no mistake" the Lord replied "your name is not in the Book of Life because you never turned to Me for salvation."

A screen was pulled down and on it Oswald Peterson could see the whole of his life, even the thoughts and intents of his heart. As it progressed the Lord read out the record of Oswald's life.

"At the age of seven you stole some money from your best friend Sam Smith, you're a thief" said the Lord. See Footnote 6 "You then told him that you didn't know anything about the missing money. When you were twenty, you told your boss at work that you were off sick, when all the time you were at home doing a bit of D.I.Y, you're a liar.

You swindled your employer of two hundred pounds, you're a cheat and a thief.

You committed adultery with a girl at the office named Sandra Jolly."

"But Lord, there must be some mistake?" said Oswald Peterson "I didn't commit adultery with her."

Footnote 6

It is unlikely that the Lord will read out the record it this manner (eg at the age of seven you did... or when you reached the age of...). The record will, I'm sure, be a continuous one, but for the sake of time and space I've had to do this. To write it in the correct manner, would take a whole book for each life mentioned.

"That's right," said the Lord "you didn't commit the act of adultery, but you did in your heart. Remember when you got into your car to go over to Sandra's home and it wouldn't start?"

"I remember" replied Oswald as he saw himself on the screen getting very cross because his car wouldn't start.

"If I hadn't stopped you, and your car had started, you would have committed the act of adultery, you're an adulterer" said the Lord.

"Remember that man at the office that you hated so much that you wanted to kill him. If I hadn't stopped you, you would have killed him, you're a murderer."

"But Lord how have I rejected you?" Oswald asked fearfully.

"Remember when you were age of fifteen your dad died, that was My first warning for you to come to Me for salvation. When you were twenty, your mother died, that was My second warning.

When you were forty-five your son Tom, who was then twenty-five, accepted My salvation and came to know Me as his personal Saviour. When he told you about it, you laughed him to scorn, but he loved Me, as he still does, he continued to tell you of Me and each time you rejected what he had to say.

Every Sunday from the pulpit of the church you attended, My servant faithfully proclaimed the message of My salvation, but every week you did not come to Me. When I sent some of My children into your life and they told you how they had come to know the salvation and the new life that I gave to them, you laughed and scoffed at them. Many times they talked with you about Me and My message of salvation, but every time, you rejected Me.

At the age of sixty you went to hear My servant John Calvin Smith and again you heard My message of salvation, but once again you rejected it."

Oswald Peterson watch himself sat in the meeting listening to John Calvin Smith. At the end of the meeting when John Calvin Smith gave the invitation to accept Christ, Oswald saw himself stubbornly sit there in his seat and refused to respond to the appeal.

"Even when you were on your deathbed," the Lord continued "I sent your son, Tom, to ask you with your dying breath to turn to Me but again you refused and you died in your sin. As you have said, you did do a lot of good in the community and this will be weighed in the balance as I pass judgement on you. However, your good works will not get you into Heaven.[96] I suffered and died that you could have eternal life, but you turned it down," said the Lord showing Oswald the holes in His hands and feet. In doing so you have rejected Me, and have thrown My Father's gift of salvation and forgiveness back in His face."

The Lord then said with tears in His eyes to one of the angels on His right hand "take him and cast him into the lake of fire."

The next person to be judged was a vicar, the Reverend Jack Spooner. "Jack Spooner,"said the Lord as He read out the record "you stand here before me, guilty of stealing, lying, cheating, heresy, deceit, and sexual perversion."

Just as before, his life, thoughts, and intents of the heart were shown on the screen. When you were seven you stole some sweets from you sister, you are a thief. When you were nine you lied to your mother about having been to school, when all the time you had gone fishing with a friend, you're a liar.

When you were in training to become a vicar you were put in charge of some of the funds. You cheated the Bible school out of two hundred and fifty five pounds and twenty three pence.

When you became a vicar and were given your first parish you cheated the congregation out of three thousand pounds. You're a cheat and a thief.

You did begin well when you started preaching. You taught that salvation was through Me and what I did on the cross, but you never made any commitment yourself. You then went astray and you denied My resurrection and taught that all religions would lead to My Father, you're a heretic and a deceiver. Because of your teaching and manner of life there are many here at this judgement seat. I will require their blood at your hands.

You abused some young boys who were put into your care. You wrecked their lives. You are a sexual pervert. Because you should have known better your judgement will be all the greater."

Then the Lord said to an angel on His right, "take him and bind him hand foot and cast him into the lake of fire."

The next person to be judged was a young lady. Just as before she could see her life from beginning to end shown on the screen.

"Sandra Samson you stand here before Me guilty of lying, stealing, taking My Name in vain, and being unforgiving" said the Lord. At the age of ten you stole some money from your mum and when she questioned you about the missing money, you said that you didn't know anything about it. You're a thief and a liar.

When you got older, you started using My Name to spice up your speech, which you continued to do for the rest of your life.

When you fell out with your friend, Samantha Jason, you said that you would never forgive her. It was then that you started a hate campaign against her. Even when she came to you to ask your forgiveness you shouted and swore at her and said "I hate you, and I will never forgive you!"

With that Sandra burst into tears "I'm sorry Lord," she said "please forgive me?"

"Samantha gave you numerous opportunities to make amends with her but each time you threw it back in her face" the Lord continued. "When she was on her way home from a date you met her and told lies about her to her boyfriend and as a result they split up. Samantha was in tears for days, but what did you care. When you found out what had happened you laughed and said "it serves her right." You even sent some of your friends to beat her up on her way home from work. As a result she was stabbed nine times and spent three weeks in hospital. Whilst she was there recuperating, she came to know Me as her personal Saviour.

After coming to know Me she wanted to tell you about Me and My salvation and she wanted you to come to know Me also. After she came out of hospital she came around to your house and she told you that she had become a follower of Me and again she asked you to forgive her. But you said "what! you've become a religious nutcase, that makes it even worse?" and you then threw a cup of boiling hot coffee in her face. It scolded her so badly that she had to spend two more weeks in hospital.

Even when the police insisted that she press charges, she declined, and said "No! I forgive Sandra."

After coming to know Me, there was not a day in her life that she didn't pray for you to accept Me as your Saviour" said the Lord. "I heard her prayers and gave you every opportunity to repent and come to Me but you threw it back in My face.

Samantha never gave up praying for you and she cried for weeks after you were killed in your road accident."

"Oh, Lord, what a fool I've been," said Sandra as she began to sob "Oh! please Lord! will you forgive me?"

The Lord replied "because of the way you were with Samantha, and because you rejected My message of salvation that she tried to tell you about, she will share eternity with Me, and you now stand before Me at The Great White Throne Judgement. You had every opportunity to repent

whilst you were still alive but you turned it down. My word is clear, there is no forgiveness, at this judgement, neither is there any second chance after death. You left it too late, and now I cannot forgive you. You will have to face the judgement. Even if I could forgive you, you are not genuinely sorry for what you've done. You are only saying that you're sorry to try to avoid the judgement."

"Well! why should that bitch be allowed into Heaven while I'm left here to face this awful judgement?!" said Sandra.

The Lord looked at her with sorrow in His eyes. "Sandra," He said "I have loved you since the day you were born, and have showered My love upon you, and all you have done is throw it back in My face. I've given you every opportunity to repent but you have rejected it, and by what you have just said, you have proved that you still have hatred in your heart. I cannot allow any sinful person into Heaven that has not been cleansed by My precious blood.

The Lord turned to an angel on His right and said with tears in His eyes "take her and cast her into outer darkness, into the lake of fire."

The next person to be judged was another young lady, and just as before she saw all of her life from beginning to end with her thoughts and intents of her heart shown on the screen just like all the others.

"Janet Parkhurst you stand here before me guilty of lying, cheating, stealing, adultery, selfishness, swearing, and taking the Lord's Name in vain" said the Lord. "At the age of nine you took twenty-three pounds and thirty-two pence from your mother's purse. You also stole ten pounds from your best friend. You're a thief.

When you were sixteen, you cheated on your exam papers at school, you're a cheat. You also started using My Name and the Name of My Father to spice up your conversations, it was at the same time you started swearing.

At school you went behind the bike sheds for a quick smoke and to get a quick fix of drugs with a group of friends when you thought that no-one was looking.

When you were seventeen, you started drinking heavily and by the time you were eighteen you had become an alcoholic.

At the age of twenty you went to bed with anyone who was willing to commit fornication or adultery with you. You broke up many marriages and left their children without a mother or father, all of whose names and faces you see on the screen now. Many of those little ones grew up not believing in Me and they never came to Me for salvation because of all that you have done. I will require their blood at your hands. You didn't care how many broken hearts or broken lives you caused. You didn't care how many broken homes or broken marriages you left behind. All that mattered to you was that you had your fun and kicks."

"I'm sorry, Lord" said Janet who was by now crying bitterly "please will you forgive me?"

"I gave you every opportunity to repent and turn to Me for salvation and forgiveness" continued the Lord. "Remember that man in the High Street who was giving out gospel tracts and you took one and when you saw what it was you immediately threw it on the ground. Then there was that church group who faithfully preached the way of salvation every Sunday on the seafront. All you and a group of friends you were with could do each week was to laugh and poke fun and them. You would shout and jeer to deliberately try to disrupt the meeting.

I have given you more than enough opportunities to repent and come to Me. There is no second chance at this judgement seat, and you had every opportunity to repent whilst you were still alive, but you turned it down. You have rejected My offer of salvation, and I now have no alternative but to honour your choice." Then the Lord turned to an angel on His right and said

with tears in His eyes "take her and cast her into the lake of fire."

The next person to be judged was a middle-aged man. "Jack Short, you stand here before Me guilty of being uncaring, bullying, bribery, terrorism, and rejecting My offer of salvation" said the Lord. Once again just as before all of Jack's thoughts and intents of his heart were shown on the screen, and the Lord read out the record. "At the age of eight you bullied a boy of the same age as you, called Rickey Turner. You bribed your friends to join in with you in your hate campaign against Rickey"

As Jack looked at the screen he saw himself in the school playground with some of his friends. They were all bullying Rickey. Jack heard himself say "I can't stand you, in fact I hate you. I hate the sight of you, in fact we all do." He saw Rickey begin to cry and heard himself say tauntingly, "cry baby! cry baby!" and then watched himself go over and give Rickey a hard kick on the leg. Rickey cried out in pain and began to cry even more.

"You didn't care how much you hurt Rickey" said the Lord. "You hated him without any provocation. He was brought up by two Christian parents who loved him dearly. He was a well behaved boy and you were jealous of him, and you hated him for it.

When you were in senior school, you bullied a boy called Brian Dixon, just because he was a follower of Me."

Once again Jack saw himself in the school playground and heard himself say "hey, Brian, I hear you've become a religious nutcase."

"No," Brian replied "but I have put my trust in the Lord Jesus Christ. He has changed my life completely. Remember how bad tempered I used to be? Well that's all changed now, I'm a different person. And remember how I always said I was terrified of dying? Jesus took away that fear. I know without a doubt that if I were to die right now I would go to Heaven to be with my Lord, you should trust Jesus too!"

"What and become a religious nutcase like you?!" Jack replied "you've got to be joking!" and he started beating and kicking Brian.

"You beat up Brian so badly that he had to spend four weeks in hospital" said the Lord.

"At the age of twenty five you got married to Carol Burnsteign, and you had three children by her. She was a good wife to you and she really loved you, but you treated her like dirt. In spite of that, she still remained faithful to you and loved you.

When your eldest son Paul was ten you started beating him up. When you came home drunk one night you punched him in the stomach, and knocked him to the ground, and then kicked him in the face three times just because he borrowed five pounds off you without asking you first. You didn't even give the boy a chance to explain that he intended to pay it back from his pocket money, before you started beating him. You were always on his case, telling him how useless and good for nothing he was. As a result when Paul was fifteen he went out and committed suicide by throwing himself off a cliff, because of the way you treated him.

You then started beating up your other children and as a result Carol decided to leave you for the safety of the children. When she told you she was leaving, you even beat her up."

As Jack watched the screen he saw how cruel he had been to his wife and children.

"Carol never stopped loving you" said the Lord. "In fact when she came to accept Me as her personal Saviour there was never a time that she stopped praying for your salvation, and restitution in your marriage. She encouraged your other children to pray for you too. Carol even sent you a letter telling you of the wonderful change that had taken place in her life when she accepted My salvation, but you didn't even both to read the letter. As soon as you saw who it was from you immediately tore it up. Carol would have come back to you if it were not for the

safety of the children. You are a very cruel and wicked man.

At the age of thirty-five you joined a terrorist group called the Cheese Puffs Dance Group so called to disguised its true identity. You and your group had a particular hatred for My people the Jews. 'Kill all Jews' was the group's motto. You planted a bomb on a school bus in Jerusalem killing all the children on board."

Jack then saw all the carnage and devastation he had caused. He saw all the parents screaming and crying for their children.

"None of those children deserved to die, you killed them just because they were Jewish" the Lord continued.

"You left a bomb outside the Houses of Parliament in London which exploded killing eleven people and injuring fifteen others."

Again Jack saw all the carnage and devastation he had caused. He saw all the relatives screaming and crying for their loved ones.

At fifty-three you hijacked an airliner and deliberately crashed it killing yourself and all on board. I require their blood at your hands."

Yet again Jack saw all the carnage and devastation he had caused. Once again he saw all the relatives screaming and crying for their loved ones.

Jack burst into tears and said "I never realised what heartache and sorrow I'd caused, please will you forgive me Lord?"

"I gave you every opportunity to repent whilst you were still alive, but you turned it down, remember Brian Dixon, and your wife's letter which you tore up without reading?"

Jack bowed his head sadly, he did remember how Brian Dixon had tried to tell him the way of salvation in Jesus, but he had thrown it back in his face calling him a religious nutcase, and he also remembered his wife's letter.

"Jack, if only you had come to Me for salvation whilst you were still alive" said the Lord with tears in His eyes "I would have forgiven you, but now it's too late." The Lord then turned to an angel on His right-hand side and said "take him, bind him hand and foot, and cast him into the lake of fire." **NB. See Appendix 97**

The next person to be judged was a king, then a beggar, followed by a government official, and so on and so forth until all at The Great White Throne had been judged.

At last the Great White Throne Judgement was over. The Lord wiped the tears from His eyes because He took no pleasure in judging the creation He had made and loved. He died on the cross so that none of them would ever have to face an eternity in Hell, but they had spurned His love and rejected His salvation. The Lord would have given them eternal life if only they had come to Him, but they rejected all that the Lord had done for them. They could have laid all their sins on Jesus, but they refused to do so, and therefore they had to bear the punishment for their sins and spend eternity in the Lake of Fire (or Hell). [97]

Now that the Great Judgement Day was finally over, righteousness, peace, and love would reign forever. Never again would anyone have cause to cry, for all death, sorrow, tears, and pain have gone forever. Never again would anyone ever suffer the loss of a loved one in death for no-one would anyone ever die, for God's perfect righteousness, peace and love would reign in the universe forever. His precious loved ones will see His face.[98]

After the Great Judgement Day the Lord created a New Heaven and a New Earth.[99] Jimmy and his family watched as the New Jerusalem descended from God out of Heaven. Having the Glory of God, it's light was like a most precious stone even like jasper, clear as crystal. The building of the wall was of jasper and the city was pure gold like clear glass.[100] The foundation of the

wall of the city was garnished with all manner of precious stones. It had twelve gates, and every several gate was one pearl and the street of the city was pure gold which looked like transparent glass.[101] The size of the city was 1.500 miles in length by, 1.500 miles wide and it was1.500 miles in height.[102]

"Wow," said Jimmy "I've never seen anything so fantastically beautiful."

The Lord then invited all of His precious children into the city, and soon Jimmy found himself walking down the golden streets of the city. "I've never seen anything so wonderful," Jimmy thought to himself as he entered the city "this is fabulous."

After he'd been there a while the Lord took Jimmy to the Throne Room of God. When he entered the city, Jimmy thought that he could never see anything as wonderful, or as beautiful as the Holy City, but as he entered the Throne Room of God he gasped in amazement at sight he saw. There before his eyes was God the Father in all His Glory, this was the most glorious and the most beautiful sight that had ever met his eyes. Jimmy was buckled to the ground in awe and wonder at the sight, and in worship of Him that was on the Throne. The Glory of God radiated from the throne in the most glorious radiance of the most glorious brilliant light imaginable in a glorious mass of colour. Jimmy felt the most absolute pristine purity and Holiness he had ever felt in his entire life and realised that he was indeed on Holy Ground. He could see without a doubt as to why God could not allow sin into His presence. Jimmy had to shade his eyes, the light was so bright that he found he could not look at the Face of God the Father. Perfection and absolute purity radiated from the throne. Jimmy felt so undone before the all seeing eye of God. "I'm glad I know Jesus" he thought to himself. The one who was seated on the throne was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow about the throne, in sight like an emerald.[103] There were twenty four elders clothed in white garments falling down before the throne worshipping the One on the throne. Out of the throne proceeded lightning and thunderings and voices. Before the throne was a sea of glass which was like crystal.[104] There were four angels about Him each of them had six wings giving glory to God and saying, "Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, which was and is, and is to come."[105] Glory, Majesty, Power and Might emanated from the throne. As Jimmy lay prostrate on the ground before the maker and creator of the entire universe. He felt so humble and realised just how small and insignificant he was before God, yet at the same time he could feel that God The Father loved him. He had never felt or seen such Glory, Majesty, Love and Power. "Father you are so beautiful and so wonderful, thank you for sending Your Son to die for me on the cross" Jimmy said, very, very reverently and with a heart full of love. "Oh, my Father, my Heavenly Father I do love and worship you." The Father didn't have to say anything Jimmy just knew that he was loved.

After a while the Lord Jesus came over to Jimmy and said lovingly "Come, it's time to go."

Jimmy felt that he wanted to spend all eternity laid before the Throne so he asked longingly "can't I stay here?"

The Lord smiled and said kindly "you've all eternity to come here again" and He then took Jimmy by the hand and lifted him to his feet.

"Lord, I love you" said Jimmy after he had stood up.

The Lord once again smiled at Jimmy and said "I love you too, son. Come, I'd like to take you to the home I've prepared for you. The Lord then took Jimmy to the biggest and most beautiful mansion that he had ever seen and said "welcome home Jimmy."

Jimmy gasped in amazement "you, you, you, mean, that, that, this, mansion is mine?!" he stammered in amazement.

"That's right, son" said the Lord with love in His voice "you are home and you'll never have to suffer any loss again. You'll never again have cause to cry, for all death, sorrow, tears, and pain have gone forever, for the former things have passed away. [106]

Just then Jimmy heard his mum's voice calling "Jimmy, Jimmy, it's time to wake up" as she came into his bedroom with his breakfast and sat down on the bed. It had all been a dream.

"Mum!" Jimmy shouted as he woke up and flung his arms around her neck. "I've had the most peculiar and wonderful dream, I dreamt that the Lord had returned and you and dad were taken to Heaven and I got left behind!" he said without taking a breath. "But I got saved and we all met up again in Heaven. The Lord had just given me my mansion when you woke me up."

"The meeting your dad and I went to last night was being televised" said Jimmy's mum. "Uncle Henry and Auntie Freda watched it on the television last night. John Calvin Smith was preaching on the second coming of the Lord. You probably heard it as you were going to sleep and that's why you dreamt about it."

"Is dad still home?" said Jimmy as he dashed down the stairs and into the dining room. "Dad! Dad! I love you!" he shouted as he ran into the room and flung himself into his dad's arms.

"Now what brought that on?" Jimmy's dad asked.

"I dreamt that the Lord had come and you'd been taken to Heaven and Uncle Henry, and Auntie Freda, and Sam, and me all got left behind."

"Well we're all here now" said his dad "and I've got something to tell you. Uncle Henry, Auntie Freda, your mum and I have come to know the Lord."

"What did you do when you came to know the Lord?" Jimmy asked.

"Well," said his dad "you have to be willing to turn from everything that you know is wrong and invite Jesus into your life."

"That's just what I did in my dream" said Jimmy as bowed his head "perhaps I'd better do it for real?"

Jimmy's dad then lead him in the sinner's prayer and Jimmy repeated it.

"I feel so different" said Jimmy.

"That's because Jesus has come to live in your heart" his dad replied.

"Dad, could I have a Bible, please?"

"Of course you can" Jimmy's dad replied kindly.

"I'll tell you what, Jimmy, as it's my day off from work I'll meet you from school in the car and we'll go down town and have a look in the Christian book shop. Perhaps they may be able to recommend the best one for you."

Jimmy smiled "thank you dad" he said. "Can we have a bit of chocolate cake in a cafe and can Sam come too?"

Jimmy's dad smiled "yes," he said "you can have a piece of chocolate cake and Sam can come too, providing that it is all right with his parents."

Just after breakfast there was a knock at the door. It was Sam calling to see if Jimmy was ready for school.

"Come on in for a moment, Sam" said Jimmy's mum kindly.

"I won't be a minute, Sam," said Jimmy "I've just got to put my school books in my bag."

"How are things with you Sam?" Jimmy's mum asked.

"Well," Sam replied "my mum and dad let me stay up last night and we all watched a Christian meeting that was being held in the Assembly Rooms in Oaktree, and we all came to know Jesus last night. I don't know what has happened but I feel so different."

"I know what you mean, Sam" said Jimmy's mum "we were at the meeting and we've all came

to know Jesus too."

After Jimmy's mum had packed his lunch in his bag both he and Sam set off for school. As they approached the school gates, they heard a voice shout out "come up hither" followed by the sound of a trumpet and before they knew what was happening they found themselves walking in the clouds along with their families and millions of others. There before them was the biggest choir they had ever seen singing praises to the Lamb, the Lord Jesus Christ, and there before the great company stood the Lord Jesus in all His Glory. The Lord said "Come you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you before the foundation of the World" and within seconds they found themselves walking through the pearly gates of Heaven and into Heaven itself. It was more beautiful than anything they'd ever seen in their entire lives. The atmosphere was so peaceful and pure like nothing they had ever known before. The birds in the trees sang such sweet melodies that they had never heard before on Earth. The whole place was aglow with the Glory of God. "Wow!" said Jimmy "this is brill!"

THE END

CHAPTER EIGHT A WORD FROM THE AUTHOR

You've read the story and I hope you've enjoyed it, but more than that, I hope that it has made you realise your need of Christ. Jesus is coming back, are you ready for Him? The state of the world, and events in the Middle East all indicate that the coming of the Lord is drawing near.

The Bible states that Israel had to become a nation once again, (this happened in 1948) and Jerusalem had to be in the hands of the Jews when the Lord returns (this happened in the 6 day war in 1967).

Jesus said *"And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then the end shall come."*[107] The gospel in now being preached to the whole world via radio, satellite and cable television, and the Internet.

Then there is the EU, I believe that this could well be the Old Roman Empire coming back together as foretold by the prophet Daniel.

It says in the book of the Revelation chapter1 and verse 7 *'Behold He comes in the clouds and every eye shall see Him'.* Until a few years ago this was puzzling to many as to how every eye could see Him when there are different time zones in the world and people live in different parts of the Earth. How could everyone see Him at the same time? Well, with the vast telecommunications there are today, through television, satellite, and the internet it is not very difficult to see how everyone could see Him at the same time.

* Of course you may be reading this book after the Rapture has already taken place, and you may be asking "what hope is there for me? How can I be ready when the Lord returns?" In answering these questions may I give you some good advice. There is hope for you, you haven't left it too late to accept the Lord Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and Saviour.

First **don't** accept the new identification mark given by the new world leader (I've no idea what his name will be).

Second, be willing to repent of your sin (that is, you must be willing to turn away from everything you know is wrong).

Third, ask Jesus to become your Lord and Saviour (there's a prayer to help you and the end of this chapter).

But you may be asking "what about me, I knew the way of salvation before the Rapture and I understand that there is a verse that says 'no-one who knew the way of salvation before will get any chance after the Rapture'? Am I without hope?" There are such a verses but don't loose heart there is still hope for you. The verses referred to are 2 Thessalonians 2:10-12 which read: *'And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believe not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness'.* At first these verses are frightening, but if you read them carefully, you will see that God sends a strong delusion so that they would believe a lie. If you've any concern about your salvation, then God has not sent you a strong delusion and there is still hope. You can be saved if you wish.

For those reading this book and the Rapture has not yet taken place, (although the following applies to both categories) may I ask you to come to salvation whilst there is still time. You may be tempted to put it off until another day, but there is an old saying 'tomorrow never comes' and it's true. There are many who have put off salvation until another day and are now facing a lost

eternity away from God. Through unexpected illness or an accident they died before accepting Christ. It says in 2 Corinthians 6:2 *...now is the accepted time; behold now is the day of salvation.* You see we have no promise of tomorrow. But then you may be saying "what if you're wrong? I don't want to commit intellectual suicide." A lot of people have a wrong idea about God, they think that He wants to spoil all their fun, but nothing could be farther from the truth. It says in the gospel of John chapter 10 and verse 10 *...I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly*. You see, God loves you and the only thing that He wants to take from you is your sin. If, you accept Christ and find at the end of your life that I'm wrong about eternity then you will have had a good life and you will have lost nothing. But if you don't accept Him and come to the end of your life and you find that I'm right then you will have lost everything.

You may be saying "I'm all right as I am, why do I need God? I don't want God interfering in my life right now, and if I live a good life, God will accept me." May I ask you, if you don't want God now, what makes you think that you will want Him at the end of your life? If you don't want God, why should He allow you into Heaven, after all, Heaven is His home? Would you allow someone to live in your home who didn't want anything to do with you?

It is my most earnest prayer that you come to know Jesus today. He loves you more then you'll ever know.

If you would like to give your life to the Lord and want to ask Jesus to be your Lord and Saviour you must be willing to turn from your sin and ask him to forgive you. Below is a prayer to help you, but I would like to say that this prayer is not a magic formula, it will not automatically give you eternal life just because you have prayed it, but if it is prayed from a sincere heart, and is really meant, then I can guarantee that God will give you eternal life. He will change you and give you a brand new start in life.

Prayer:

Dear Lord Jesus, I realise that I am a sinner and in need of Your forgiveness. I am sorry for my sin. I am willing to turn away from everything I know to be sinful. I put my trust in You, and You alone, and what You did on the cross for my salvation. I ask You to forgive me now, and save me. Please give me a new start in life, and wash away all my past sins and wrong doings. I want to follow and serve You for the rest of my life. In Your precious Name. Amen.

If you prayed this pray from your heart you are now a child of God and you will one day spend all eternity with Him.

If you really meant what you said, then I would advise you to read the Bible, and take time to talk with the Lord in prayer every day. This is important in order for you to get to know the Lord better and it will help you to grow as a Christian.

It is also important for you to find good Bible believing church to help you in your new found faith. You may be asking "but which one do I choose?" Well, far be it from me to tell you which church you should attend, but I will give you some guidelines to help you with your choice. To make sure that you are attending a good Bible believing church, and not one of those way out cults, it may be a good idea to ask them for what is known as a statement of faith (what they believe). All true churches will have the same basic fundamental beliefs (although they may differ on what I would call minor issues).

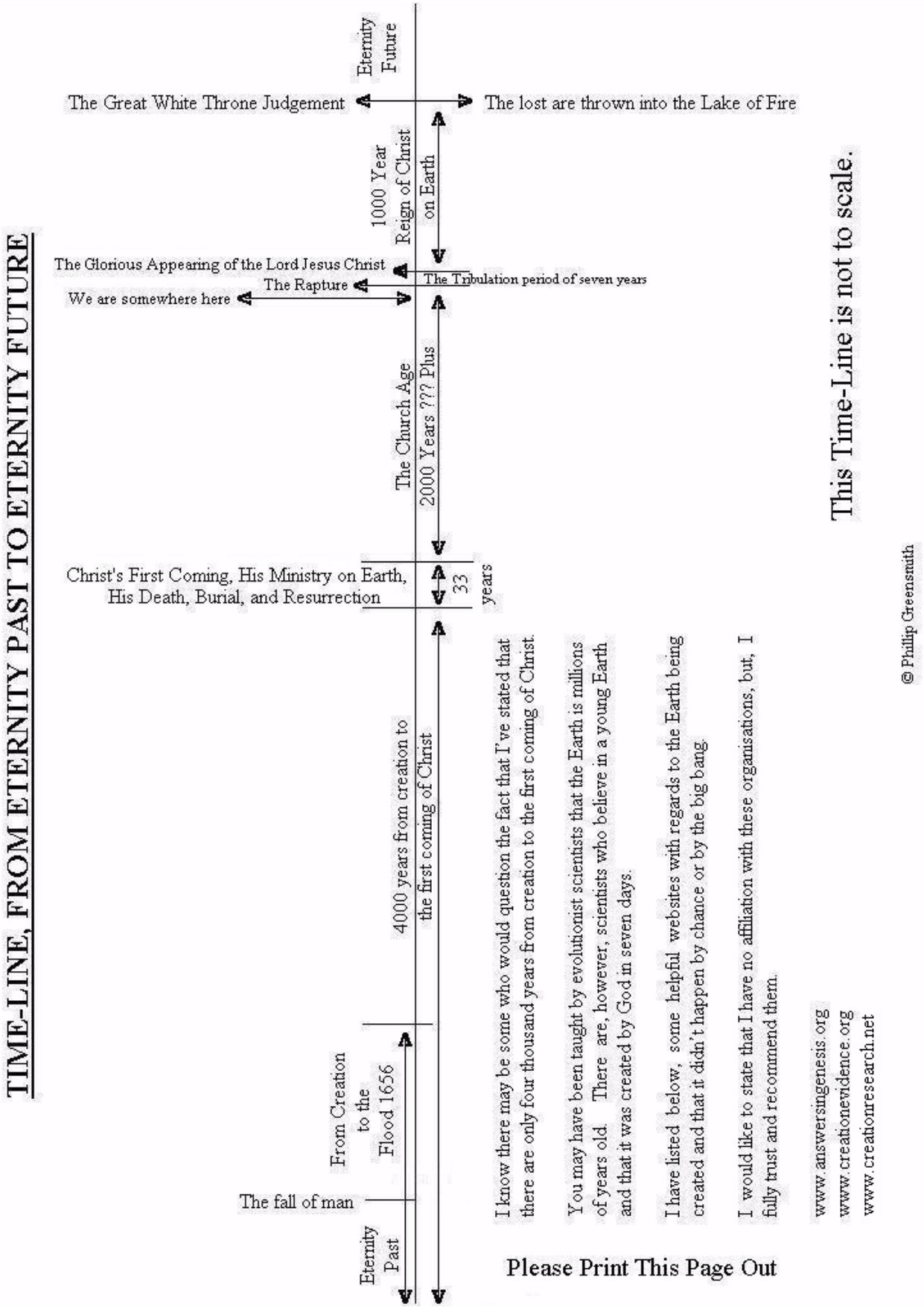
These basic beliefs are as follows:

- There is One Triune God, three Persons co-equal in one God, The Father, The Son and The Holy Spirit
- The Virgin Birth. Christ was born of the Virgin Mary
- Christ paid the price for our sins when He died on the cross.
- Christ's death, burial, and bodily resurrection and ascension to Heaven where He now sits at the right Hand of God the Father on High.
- The eternal state of bliss in Heaven for the redeemed and eternal punishment for the lost.
- The great commission given to the church by Christ just before He ascended to Heaven (that is: go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature).
- The physical and bodily return of the Lord Jesus Christ.
- The final judgement of all.
- Salvation is by the mercy and grace of God and we can do nothing to earn it.
- Salvation can only be obtained through repentance and faith in the shed blood of the Lord Jesus Christ.
- The Bible is the divinely inspired infallible word of God. It has no errors and its word is final and authoritative.

These beliefs may worded differently than I have stated, and they may vary very slightly in different churches but they will all believe these basic doctrines, and I would strongly advise against joining any church that wants to alter or deny any of them.

May the Lord bless you as you seek to follow Him.

© Phillip Greensmith 1996



WORLD ORDER OF FUTURE EVENTS

1. The next event is the Rapture which is found in 2 Thessalonians 4:16-18. This is where Lord returns for His children and He brings with Him those who have died in Christ to be raised from the dead and given a resurrection body. Those of us who are still living at this time will not die but will be changed and given a resurrection body. We will then be taken to Heaven before the Tribulation begins.

2. The world will then suffer a fearful and terrible time (known as the Tribulation) for seven years ruled by a one world government dictator (Revelation chapter 6:1-19).

3. At the end of the seven years the Lord will return with His saints at the Glorious Appearing (Revelation 19:11-21). Satan will be bound and cast into the Bottomless Pit for a thousand years, Revelation (20:1-3). We who know the Lord will reign with Him for a thousand years, (Revelation 20:4). During this time there will peace on earth, this period is known as the millennium.

4. After the thousand years Satan will be loosed from the pit and will again wage war but the Lord will defeat him and he will be cast into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:7-10).

5. The next event is the second resurrection where the unsaved are raised from the dead. They have been in Hell which is called Hades from the time of their death until now. They will be raised to life to meet (along with those unsaved who are still alive) the Great White Throne Judgement. This judgement is where the unsaved will have to give an account as to how they have lived on Earth (Revelation 20:11-15). They will then be cast into the lake of fire which is called Gehenna.

6. After the Great White Throne Judgement the Lord will make a New Heaven and a New Earth where in dwells righteousness. All death, sorrow, and pain will be gone forever. Creation will finally be restored to what it was before the fall, (Revelation chapters 21 & 22).

APPENDIX

For those who may not know how to find a scripture references such as below (2 Thessalonians 2:10-12). There are 2 books of Thessalonians so the first number indicates that it is the second book of Thessalonians. This is always followed by the chapter number (in this case it is chapter 2) then followed by the verse number or numbers. If there are two verse numbers separated by a hyphen, the first number is the start of the scripture reading and the last is where the reading finishes. So 2 Thessalonians 2:10-12 means the second book of Thessalonians chapter 2 from verse 10 to verse 12 inclusive. If there is a semi-colon instead of a hyphen between the verse numbers this indicates that they are two consecutive verses in the same chapter and book.

1. There is no promise that you will ever be given a second chance to be saved if you don't take the Lord's offer of salvation before the Rapture, so I would strongly edge you to do so whilst you still have time. However, if you are reading this book and you have been left behind after the Rapture, and if you have any concerns about your salvation then you haven't left it too late.
   2 Thessalonians 2:10-12 which reads: *'And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believe not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness'*. As you will see from this verse *'God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:'* So as you see if you have any concern then God has not sent you a 'strong delusion, that you should believe a lie.' So, Yes! you can still accept the Lord Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and Saviour if you wish, but don't delay in doing so, or you might leave it too late.

   <u>May I give you some good advice.</u>

   If the rapture has occurred and you have been left behind then.

   Firstly **<u>don't</u>** accept the new identification mark given by the new world leader (I've no idea what his name will be (if you do, there will be no chance of receiving salvation.))

   Secondly, be willing to repent of your sin (be willing to turn away from everything you know to be wrong).

   Thirdly, ask Jesus to become your Lord and Saviour. There's a prayer to below to help you:

   Dear Lord Jesus. I realise that I have sinned and I do deserve your judgement. Lord I ask you to forgive me. I am willing to change. I ask you to come into my life and change me. Save me now, become my Lord and Saviour. I'm willing to follow you for the rest of my life, and I ask you to one day give me a home in

Heaven. I ask this in your Name. Amen.

2. Daniel 2:28-42 describes the future of the ruling nations of the world. All of these nations have come and gone except the last one. The legs of iron mentioned in verse 40 represents the old Roman Empire. I believe where it mentions the toes on the feet of clay and iron in verse 42 it is referring to a revived Roman Empire and it may well be referring the EU. Daniel 7:24 shows that this nation will become a ten nation confederacy.

3. Revelation 6:2-6 Please note the rider on all four horses is the one world leader known as the Anti-Christ. He will first come to power as a man of peace. As you will see in verse two of chapter six he has bow but no arrow which means he will conquer by diplomatic means. This person may well be alive today, but he will only come to prominence after the Rapture.

4. Daniel 9:20-27 *Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.* We see in these verses that from the command to rebuild (found in Nehemiah 2:2-8) the wall of Jerusalem will be seventy weeks to the coming of the Messiah. The seventy weeks are not weeks of days but are weeks of years. Of which 69 of them were for the first coming of Jesus. Notice the after 69 weeks that is say that '*Messiah be cut off*' this is speaking of His death. The last week (No,70) are the seven years of the Tribulation. The Anti-Christ will make a covenant with Israel for the seven years, but he will brake it after the first three and a half years.

5. Revelation 11:3 Although the two witnesses mentioned here are unnamed, it is believed by many that they are Moses and Elijah because the works that they do during the Tribulation are very similar to the work that Moses and Elijah did during their earthly ministry. It was also Moses and Elijah that appeared with the Lord and His disciples on the mountain of transfiguration in Matthew 17:3 The return of Elijah is also mentioned in the book of Malachi 4:5 '*Behold I will send you Elijah the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day*

of the Lord'.

6. 2 Peter 3:3;4

7. Revelation 6:4

8. Revelation 11:6

9. Revelation 11:4;5

10. Revelation 6:5-6

11. Revelation 6:7;8

12. James 2:19

13. Revelation 6:9

14. Genesis 18:16-33; 19:1-5 and Genesis 19:12-25

15. Revelation 6:12-17

16. Revelation 6:13

17. Revelation 6:14

18. Revelation 6:17

19. Revelation 13:11-14

20. Revelation 13:3

21. Revelation 13:14;15

22. These letters DCLXVI are the Roman Numerals for the mark of the beast 666, which is mentioned in Revelation 13:18

23. Revelation 13:16-18

24. Revelation 8:5

25. Revelation 8:7

26. Revelation 8:8;9

27. Revelation 8:10;11

28. Revelation 8:12

29. I have been very careful not to give a location where this eclipse could have occurred as this could fix a date as to when the tribulation may occur. No-one knows the date or hour when the Lord will Rapture His children or when the Tribulation will begin.

30. Revelation 7:4-8

31. John 14:6; Act 4:10-12 1 Timothy 2:5

32. Philippians 2:5-11

33. Luke 2:7

34. Luke 22:44

35. Matthew 26:39

36. Luke 22:43

37. Matthew 26:56

38. Matthew 26:14-16

39. Luke 22:47-71 Luke 23:1-21

40. Isaiah 50:6 Matthew 26:67

41. Psalm 129:3

42. Matthew 27:29 John 19:2

43. John 19:17

44. Matthew 27:32 Mark 15:21 Luke 23:26

45. Mark 15:27

46. Psalm 22:14

47. Psalm 22:7;8 Matthew 27:39-44

48. Luke 23:34

49. Romans 3:23

50. Romans 3:10-12

51. Matthew 27:45 Mark 15 33 Luke 23:44

52. Matthew 27:46; Mark 15:34

53. 2 Corinthians 5:21

54. Matthew 27:50 Luke 23:46 John 19:30

55. John 10:17;18

56. Matthew 27:57;58

57. John 19:31-34 Psalm 34:20

58. Matthew 28:12-15

59. Matthew 27:62-66

60. Matthew 28:5-7

61. Acts 1:2-9 Romans 8:34

62. Revelation 9:1-11

63. I believe that every believer in Christ has the seal of God, as in Ephesians1:13 and therefore will not be hurt by the locusts which are sent to hurt those people who do not have the seal of God as in Revelation 9:4

64. Revelation 9:6

65. Revelation 9:15-21 The scripture is not clear as to this event found here. I have interpreted as an army of demons which take the lives of those who don't know Christ, but it is just as likely to be an earthly army. However, the Scripture is not clear as to how this army will kill one third of the world's population. On reading the scripture it reads like modern day warfare. This trumpet judgement which although similar must not be confused with the bowl judgement in Revelation 16:12 although they are similar they are two separate events.

66. Revelation 11:3-10

67. Revelation 11:11-12

68. Revelation 11:19

69. Revelation 16:2

70. Revelation 16:3

71. Revelation 16:4

72. Revelation 16:8

73. Revelation 16:10

74. Revelation 16:12

75. Philippians 2:10

76. Revelation 16:17-21

77. Revelation 18:8-24

78. Revelation 16:18;19 Ezekiel 38:19;20

79. Zechariah 14:1-3

80. Matthew 24:29 Mark 13:24

81. Revelation 16:16

82. Matthew 24:30 Mark 13:25;26
Revelation 19:11-19

83. Philippians 2:10;11
Revelation 19:20

84. Revelation 20:1-3

85. Zechariah 14:4

86. It is believed that mankind before the fall shone with the glory of God and it was this glory that left Adam and Eve when they ate the forbidden fruit. This is made clearer by comparing Genesis 2:25 with Genesis 3:10. Before they had eaten of the forbidden fruit they both knew that they were naked and were not ashamed (Genesis 2:25). After having eaten of the forbidden fruit Adam tried to hide himself from God because he was naked (Genesis 3:10). It seems clear that they had lost some sort of spiritual clothing. On the mount of transfiguration in Matthew 17:2 the disciples of Jesus were not afraid when they saw Him transfigured before them. I believe that Jesus was not only displaying His glory but also the glory that Adam and Eve lost, and that this will one day be restored to redeemed men and women when they receive their new resurrection bodies.

87. The Lord does not need to use the mass media to inform the world of His laws nor to inform them of how He intends to rule the World but as it is there, it is not unreasonable to think that He might.

88. The scripture nowhere indicates that the Lord will enforce the ten commandments when He returns, But it is very reasonable to think that He will do this.

89. Isaiah 65:20

90. Isaiah 11:6-8

91. Daniel 12:1-3 *[1] And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book. [2] And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.* The time of Jacobs trouble (or the Tribulations). It seems clear that Daniel did not expect to be resurrected until after this event.

92. 1 Corinthians 3:11-15 the judgement seat here is only for those who know the Lord as their personal Saviour. No unsaved person will be at this judgement. This is where Lord will reward his children for the good works they have done. The scripture is not absolutely clear as to when this judgement will occur. Some believe that it will occur immediately after the Rapture, and this may well be the case. At some point though, those who has been martyred for their faith in Jesus and those, if any, who have come through the Tribulation have to be judged at the judgment seat of Christ for their good works. It is possible

this judgement may be in two parts and those who were raptured will be judged at that time and those who were not will be at this judgement at a later date.

93. Revelation 20:7-10

94. 2 Peter 3:10-12
Revelation 20:11-15

95. This judgement must never be confused with the Judgment seat of Christ in 1 Corinthians 3:11-15. No truly born again Christian will ever be at the Great White Throne judgement. The difference between these to judgements are:
(A) The judgement seat of Christ is only for those who are His children by being born again of God's Spirit and it is to reward His children for the good works they have done.
(B) The Great White Throne Judgement is for those who don't know Christ as their Lord and Saviour, and is to recompense them for all the evil that they have done. These two judgements are distinctly two different judgements and are not one of the same. Just as there are two resurrections, one for the saved and one for the lost, so there are two judgements, one for the saved and one for the lost.

96. Ephesians 2:8,9

97. If anyone reading this book has committed any of these sins. Maybe you can't forgive yourself maybe you are saying "my sin is to big for God to forgive". I've got good news for you. There is hope and forgiveness just turn to Jesus and ask Him to forgive you. If you pray this prayer asking to be forgiven you will be and you will be born again, and you will never be at this judgement. Just pray this prayer:

Dear Lord Jesus. I realise that I have sinned and I do deserve your judgement. Lord I ask you to forgive me. I am willing to change. I ask you to come into my life and change me. Save me now, become my Lord and Saviour. I'm willing to follow you for the rest of my life, and I ask you to one day give me home in Heaven. I ask this in your Name. Amen.

98. Revelation 21:4 Revelation 22:4

99. Revelation 21:10;11

100. Revelation 21:18

101. Revelation 21:21

102. Revelation 21:16;17

103. Revelation 4:3-5

104. Revelation 4:6

105. Revelation 4:8

106. Revelation 21:4

107. Matthew 24:14

 © Phillip Greensmith 1996

This book may be download free of charge by visiting www.goldengemsofgrace.com and clicking free books on the navigation bar.

Another book you may wish to consider reading is 'Revelation Made Easy'. This book is not intended to be an in depth study in the Book Of Revelation. It is more to help you get a better understanding of it, and to help you study the Book Of Revelation for yourself.

You may find this study useful for Bible group discussions .

This book may also be downloaded free of charge from the above web address.

The Son Of Man Cometh!!! © Phillip Greensmith 1996